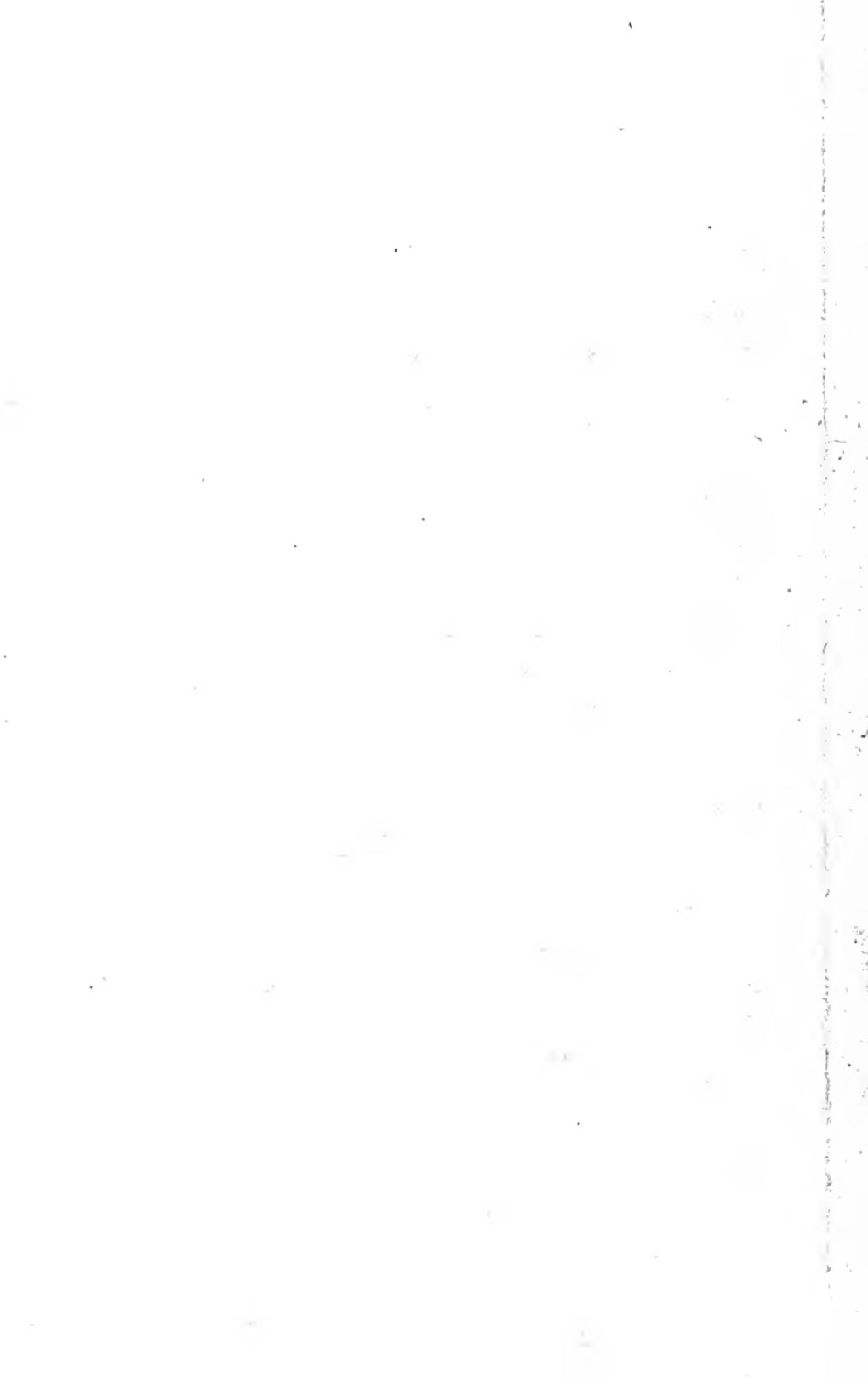


UC-NRLF



B 4 042 959



Heath's Modern Language Series

ITALIAN GRAMMAR

BY

C. H. GRANDGENT

PROFESSOR OF ROMANCE LANGUAGES IN HARVARD UNIVERSITY

*REVISED BY THE AUTHOR AND PROVIDED WITH
NEW EXERCISES AND VOCABULARIES*

BY

E. H. WILKINS

PROFESSOR OF ROMANCE LANGUAGES IN
THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

D. C. HEATH & CO., PUBLISHERS
BOSTON NEW YORK CHICAGO



COPYRIGHT, 1887 AND 1904
By C. H. GRANDGENT

COPYRIGHT, 1915
By D. C. HEATH & CO.

2 A 4

Printed in U. S. A.

P
G.
H.
M.

PREFACE

THIS volume is the result of an attempt to put into convenient form and the smallest possible compass all the grammar needed by ordinary students of Italian. Short as the book is, it contains some paragraphs which beginners will probably skip: the longer lists of words and endings and a great part of the chapters on suffixes and irregular verbs will be useful mainly for reference. While endeavoring to make my work represent primarily the language as it is spoken and written at the present day, I have tried to give also as many obsolete forms as readers of the poets will require.

It has been my aim throughout to make the rules clear for all classes of pupils, even for those ignorant of other foreign languages, provided they understand the technical words commonly used in grammars. With this object in view, I have ascribed to the Italian vowels the pronunciation of the English ones that are nearest to them; an accurate description of the Italian sounds would, I fear, prove confusing to beginners who have had no training in phonetics. It will be easy for the instructor to explain not only the vowels, but some of the consonants, and the division of words into syllables, much better than can be done in a book like this.

The authorities I have consulted most are the dictionaries of Fanfani, Rigutini and Fanfani, Fornari (*Nuovo Bazzarini*), and Tommaseo and Bellini. I have made but little use of other grammars; I am, however, indebted to Toscani for some ideas and a few of my examples. The chapters on

syntax, and the treatment of irregular verbs, pronouns, suffixes, and the plural of words in *-co* and *-go* are almost entirely the result of original work.

In conclusion, I wish to express my gratitude to Professor Nash, of Harvard, to my friend and teacher, Cav. Filippo Orlando, of Florence, and to the gentlemen who assisted me in correcting the proof-sheets; and I wish above all to thank Professor Sheldon, of Harvard, and Professor Bendelari, of Yale, without whose aid and encouragement I should scarcely have ventured to offer this book to the public.

CAMBRIDGE, September, 1887.

NOTE TO THE REVISED EDITION

So thoroughly has the old Grammar been overhauled by Professor Wilkins and me that it now presents itself almost as a new book. The original Italian texts and bits of English prose for translation have disappeared; and in place of the set of Lessons and Exercises added to the book in 1904, Professor Wilkins has furnished a fresh series, better and more abundant than the matter it supplants. A careful revision of the rules and examples has resulted in some improvement of the former and many additions to the latter. Use has been made of the system of grammatical nomenclature recently recommended by the American committee entrusted with the study of that subject. Not least among the advantages of this edition is the marked gain in typographical clearness.

CAMBRIDGE, March, 1915.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

| | PAGE |
|--|------|
| PRONUNCIATION | 1 |
| Sounds, Spelling, Accent, Syllabication, 1.—Additional Notes, 6.—Inflections of the Voice, 9. | |
| ARTICLES | 11 |
| The Definite Article, 11.—The Indefinite Article, 14. | |
| NOUNS | 15 |
| Gender, 15.—Number, 17. | |
| ADJECTIVES | 20 |
| Gender and Number, 20.—Comparison, 22. | |
| AUGMENTATIVES; DIMINUTIVES; NUMERALS | 24 |
| Augmentatives and Diminutives, 24.—Numerals, 26. | |
| DEMONSTRATIVE, INTERROGATIVE, RELATIVE, POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS | 29 |
| PERSONAL PRONOUNS | 35 |
| Conjunctive Forms, 35.—Disjunctive Forms, 40.—Forms of Address, 43. | |
| AUXILIARY VERBS | 45 |
| Auxiliaries of Voice and Tense (<i>essere</i> , <i>avere</i>), 45.—Modal Auxiliaries, 51. | |
| REGULAR AND IRREGULAR VERBS | 52 |
| The Regular Verb, 53.—The Irregular Verb, 57. | |
| MOODS AND TENSES | 61 |
| Infinitive and Participle, 61.—Past, Present, and Future, 63.—Past Future or Conditional, 65.—Subjunctive, 65. | |
| CONJUNCTIONS; PREPOSITIONS; ADVERBS | 68 |
| Conjunctions, 68.—Prepositions, 70.—Adverbs, 73. | |
| INDEFINITE PRONOUNS | 76 |
| LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS | 80 |
| First Conjugation, 81.—Second Conjugation, 82.—Third Conjugation, 85.—Fourth Conjugation, 90. | |

TABLE OF CONTENTS

| | PAGE |
|--|------|
| ALPHABETICAL LIST OF IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS | 92 |
| LESSONS AND EXERCISES | 97 |
| ITALIAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY | 155 |
| ENGLISH-ITALIAN VOCABULARY | 171 |
| INDEX | 181 |

ITALIAN GRAMMAR

PRONUNCIATION

1. The Italian alphabet has the same letters as the English, except that **k**, **w**, **x**, and **y** do not occur in native words in modern Italian.

2. The Italians distinguish seven vowels: **a**, close **e**, open **e**, **i**, close **o**, open **o**, **u**; to these may be added an intermediate **e** and **o**, used in unaccented syllables. Every vowel has a clear sound, no matter what may be its position in the word. It is never obscured; and it never tends, as do the English long vowels, to become a diphthong.

Italian vowels are all pronounced rather quickly; hence there is but little difference in quantity between accented and unaccented sounds. English-speaking students must carefully avoid drawling the accented and slighting the unaccented syllables; they should try to give to every Italian vowel about the length of **i** in 'bitter.'

a is nearly like *a* in 'father': as **fava**, **canna**, **cassa**, **palla**.

e close is nearly like *a* in 'fate': as **beve**, **vere**, **stelle**, **messe**.

e open may be formed by trying to pronounce *e* in 'bell' with the mouth very wide open: as **bella**, **amena**, **fera**, **pensa**.

i is nearly like *ee* in 'feet': as **miri**, **vini**, **fissi**, **spilli**.

o close is nearly like *o* in 'mope': as **dopo**, **dove**, **bollo**, **sotto**.

o open is nearly like *aw* in 'saw' pronounced with the mouth wide open: as **no**, **odi**, **poi**, **donna**.

u is nearly like *oo* in 'boot': as **una**, **cura**, **nulla**, **ruppi**.

(a) The letters **i** and **u** are sometimes used to represent consonant sounds (see 4); but in formulating rules they are always counted as vowels.

3. As close and open vowels are not distinguished in spelling, some rules are necessary:

1. Unaccented **e** and **o** are intermediate between close and open: as *mare*, *sea*; *amo*, *I love*.

2. **e** and **o** are close in all monosyllables¹ ending in a consonant: as *con*, *with*; *non*, *not*; *per*, *for*.

3. In monosyllables¹ and oxytones² ending in a vowel, final **e** is close, final **o** is open: as *che*, *what*; *me*, *me*; *re*, *king*; *credè*, *he believed*; *perchè*, *why*; *do*, *I give*; *Po*, *Po*; *sarò*, *I shall be*; *andò*, *he went*.

EXCEPTIONS: (a) Final **e** is open in **è**=*is*, **re**=*re*, interjections (as *aimè*, *alas*; *chè*, *nonsense*), proper names (as *Noè*, *Noah*), and foreign words (as *caffè*, *coffee*). (b) Final **o** is close in **Io** and **o**.

4. Accented **e** and **o** are always open in the groups **ie** and **uo**: as *piede*, *foot*; *fuoco*, *fire*. **e** and **o** standing for **ie** and **uo** are open: as *ven*=*viene*, *he comes*; *cor*=*cuore*, *heart*.

5. In words that have always formed a part of the spoken language, accented **e** is nearly always close when it represents Latin *ē* or *i*, open when it represents Latin *ě* or *ae*; accented **o** is nearly always close when it represents Latin *ō* or *ū*, open when it represents Latin *ǒ* or *au*. In book words accented **e** and **o** are usually open.

In all cases not covered by the first three rules, the quality of **e** and **o** will be marked in this book, an acute accent (') denoting the close, a circumflex (^) the open sound: as *avére*, *to have*; *méno*, *less*; *tiène*, *he holds*; *liêto*, *happy*; *poêta*, *poet*; *óra*, *hour*; *mólto*, *much*; *buôno*, *good*; *pôco*, *little*; *môto*, *motion*.

4. **B**, **f**, **m**, **p**, **q**, **v** are pronounced as in English.

c, before **e** or **i**, sounds like *ch* in 'chin'; elsewhere it is always like English *k*: as *cima*, *top*; *cóme*, *how*; *dólce*, *sweet*.

¹ Not including shortened forms of words that regularly have more than one syllable.

² Words accented on the last syllable.

g, before **e** or **i**, sounds like *g* in ‘gem’; elsewhere it is always like *g* in ‘go’: as *gatto*, *cat*; *gente*, *people*; *spingi*, *push*.

(a) A **cc** or a **gg** before **e** or **i** has merely the sound of *ch* in ‘chin’ or *g* in ‘gem’ prolonged: as *facce*, *faces*; *légge*, *law*.

d, **l**, **n**, **t** are pronounced further forward in the mouth than in English; the tip of the tongue should touch the back of the upper front teeth: as *alto*, *high*; *dato*, *given*; *luna*, *moon*; *nudo*, *naked*; *tuôno*, *thunder*.

h is always silent: as *ahi*, *oh!* **ha**, *he has*.

i, unaccented, before a vowel, sounds like English *y*: as *iêri*, *yesterday*; *paio*, *pair*; *più*, *more*. In the groups **cia**, **cio**, **ciu**, **gia**, **gio**, **giu**, an unaccented **i** serves only to show that the **c** or **g** is soft: as *faccia*, *face*; *guancia*, *cheek*; *ciò*, *that*; *giù*, *down*; *mangia*, *eat*; *raggio*, *ray*.

j is merely another way of writing **i**.

n before a **q** or a hard **c** or **g** has the sound of English *ng*: as *banca* (bang-ka), *bank*; *dunque* (dung-kwe), *therefore*; *lungo* (lung-go), *long*.

r is always rolled, the point of the tongue vibrating against the teeth: as *caro*, *dear*; *róssو*, *red*; *per*, *for*. When **r** is double or followed by a consonant, the trill is prolonged: as *carro*, *cart*; *burro*, *butter*; *marróne*, *chestnut*; *carne*, *meat*; *pôrta*, *door*.

s is generally pronounced nearly like English *s* in ‘see,’ but with a somewhat sharper sound: as *sô*, *I know*; *spillo*, *pin*.

Initial **s** before a sonant (**b**, **d**, **g**, **l**, **m**, **n**, **r**, **v**) has a sound intermediate between **s** and English *z*: as *sdrucciolare*, *to slip*; *slitta*, *sleigh*.

A single **s** between vowels has, in most words, the sound of English *z*: as *caso*, *case*; *cáusa*, *cause*; *viso*, *face*. But in the following cases it is pronounced like *s* in ‘see,’ ‘mason’:

(a) In *annusare*, *ásino*, *casa*, *Chiusi*, *côsa*, *così*, *desidêrio*, *naso*, *parasito*, *pêso*, *Pisa*, *pisêllo*, *pôsa*, *ripôso*, *riso*, *susina*, and their derivatives, and in some uncommon words.

(b) After the prefixes **de-**, **di-**,¹ **pre-**, **pro-**, **re-**, **ri-**, **tra-**: as *desistere*, *diségno*, *presúmere*, *proseguire*, *reservare*, *risólvere*, *trasudare*.

(c) In the adjective ending **-oso** and the adjective and substantive ending **-ése**: as *noioso*, *troublesome*; *inglése*, *English*; *mése*, *month*. But in *cortése*, *francése*, *lucchése*, *marchése*, *paése*, *paiése*, the **s** is like English *z*.

(d) In the past absolute and past participle of **chiédere**, **chiúdere**, **nascondere**, **pórre**, **rádere**, **rídere**, **rimanére**, **rispóndere**, **ródere**, and all verbs in **-éndere**; and in their compounds and derivatives: as *chiési*, *socchiuso*, *nascóse*, *rispósero*, *rasóio*, *rimase*, *corrispósi*, *rósero*, *accési*, *réso*, *scésa*.

EXCEPTIONS to this rule are **derídere**, verbs in **-clúdere**, and derivatives of **ródere**.

u, unaccented, before a vowel, sounds like English *w*: as *buôno*, *good*; *guardare*, *to look*; *può*, *he can*.

z and **zz** are generally pronounced like a long and vigorous *ts*: as *alzare*, *to lift*; *azíone*, *action*; *prêzzo*, *price*; *zío*, *uncle*.

In the following cases, however, **z** and **zz** sound like a prolonged *dz*:

(a) In *azzurro*, *dózzina*, *mêzzo*, *pranzo*, *ribrézzo*, *romanzo*, *zêlo*, and many less common words.

(b) In verbs in **-izzare** (as *utilizzare*, *to utilize*); except *attizzare*, *dirizzare*, *guizzare*, *rizzare*, *stizzare*, and their compounds, and a few uncommon words.

5. The following combinations are to be noted:

ch (used only before **e** and **i**) is always like English *k*: as *fichi* (plural of **fico**, *fig*). **sch** is like *sk*: as *schérzo*, *sport*.

gh (used only before **e** and **i**) is always like English *g* in 'go': as *aghi* (plural of **ago**, *needle*).

¹ Not to be confounded with **dis-**, **tras-**: *disonóre*, *trasandare*.

gli (written **gl** if the following vowel be **i**) is nearly like English *lli* in 'million': as *figlio, son; figli, sons.*

But in Ánglia, geroglífico, glicerina, negligere and its derivatives, and a few uncommon words borrowed from the Greek or Latin, **gl** is like English *gl*.

gn is nearly like *ni* in 'onion': as *ógni, every.*

qu is always like *kw*: as *quésto, this.*

sc before **e** and **i** is nearly like *sh* in 'ship': as *uscire, to go out.*

Before all other letters it is pronounced *sk*: as *scuôla, school; schérno, contempt.*

6. Every letter in Italian is distinctly and separately sounded; the only exceptions are **h**, silent **i** (see **4**), and the combinations mentioned in **5**.

| | | |
|--------------------------|------------------------|------------------------|
| <i>arte, art.</i> | <i>andáí, I went.</i> | <i>paúra, fear.</i> |
| <i>firma, signature.</i> | <i>áura, breeze.</i> | <i>sentíi, I felt.</i> |
| <i>* furto, theft.</i> | <i>bugie, lies.</i> | <i>nói, we.</i> |
| <i>giórno, day.</i> | <i>Európa, Europe.</i> | <i>pôi, then.</i> |
| <i>vêrso, toward.</i> | <i>miêi, my.</i> | <i>suôi, his.</i> |

Where a double consonant is written, both letters must be sounded, the first at the end of the preceding, the second at the beginning of the following syllable:

| | | |
|---------------------|-----------------------|----------------------|
| <i>anno, year.</i> | <i>babbo, father.</i> | <i>fatto, done.</i> |
| <i>mêssso, put.</i> | <i>quéllo, that.</i> | <i>bócca, mouth.</i> |

For **rr**, **zz**, and soft **cc** and **gg**, see **4**.

1, m, n, and r, when preceded by an accented vowel and followed by another consonant, are prolonged:

| | |
|-----------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| <i>alto (all-to), high.</i> | <i>tanto (tann-to), so much.</i> |
| <i>sêmpre (sêmm-pre), always.</i> | <i>parte (parr-te), part.</i> |

7. The accent is nearly always the same as in Latin. In this book it will always be noted. Of the signs written here, students need use only the grave (`), which is placed on the last syllable of oxytones and on some monosyllables; Italian writers do not agree as to the use of the other marks; many now use the acute, and not the grave, on final **e**.

8. Italian words are divided in such a way that, if possible, every syllable shall begin with a consonant:

| | |
|---------------------------------|-----------------------|
| ta-vo-lí-no, <i>table.</i> | mêz-zo, <i>half.</i> |
| frat-tán-to, <i>meanwhile.</i> | cá-cia, <i>hunt.</i> |
| al-l' uô-mo, <i>to the man.</i> | ôg-gi, <i>to-day.</i> |
| nar-rá-re, <i>to relate.</i> | po-ê-ta, <i>poet.</i> |

In the groups **s+consonant**, **consonant+r**, those mentioned in 5, and **cl**, **fl**, **gl**, **pl**, both consonants belong to the following syllable. **i=y** and **u=w** go with the following vowel; **ái, áu, ei, eu, oi** are not separated.

| | | |
|-----------|---------------|---------------|
| fê-sta | ca-stí-ghi | ri-flêt-te-re |
| te-á-tro | del-l' ác-qua | miêi |
| a-vrò | in-chiô-stro | al-l' áu-ra |
| bi-só-gno | ni-gliô-re | tuôi |

ADDITIONAL NOTES ON PRONUNCIATION

[The numbers prefixed to the following notes refer to the paragraphs of the foregoing chapter.]

1. The Tuscan names of the letters are:

| | | | | | |
|----|------|---------------|-------|------|-----------------------------|
| a | é | i | ênnne | êrre | vu or vi |
| bi | êffe | jé or i lúngo | ô | êsse | zêta (with z pronounced dz) |
| ci | gi | êlle | pi | ti | |
| di | ácca | êmme | cu | u | |

They do not change in the plural. Their gender is not fixed; in general those ending in **-a** or **-e** are considered as feminine, the others as masculine. **K, x, y** are *cáp-pa, íccase, ípsilon*, all masculine.

2. (a) The sounds **á, ê, ô**, followed by a single consonant, are somewhat longer than the other vowels: for instance, in *dá-to*, *fê-ro*, *ôvo* the accented **a, e, o** are longer than in *dât-tero*, *vê-ro*, *ôve*. Final accented vowels sound particularly short: as in *amô*, *beltâ*, *caffè*.

(b) In forming **i** the mouth should be made as broad as possible from side to side. For **u** and **ô** the lips should be puckered. For **a** and **ê** the mouth should be opened very wide.

3. (a) If an adverb in **-ménte** is formed from an adjective containing **ê** or **ô**, this vowel has, in the adverb, a secondary accent, and retains its open sound: as (brêve) **brêveménte**, *briefly*; (nôbile) **nôbilménte**, *nobly*. Furthermore, **ê** and **ô** retain their quality in seeming compounds that consist, in reality, of two or more separate words: as **tostochè** = **tôstoché** = **tôsto che**, *as soon as*.

(b) Past absolute forms and past participles in **-esi**, **-eso**, **-osi**, **-oso** have a close **e** or **o**; except **chiêsi** (also **chiési**), **esplôsi**, **esplôso**, **lêso**.

(c) In the suffixes **-eccio** (**-a**), **-esco** (**-a**), **-ese**, **-essa**, **-etto** (**-a**), **-ezzo** (**-a**), **-mente**, and **-mento** the **e** is always close; while in the diminutive suffix **-ello** (**-a**), and in the endings **-ente**, **-enza**, **-erio** (or **-ero**), and **-esimo** (**-a**) it is open: as **inglésc**, *English*; **probabilmén**te, *probably*; **prudênt**e, *prudent*; **ventêsim**o, *twentieth*.

(d) In the endings **-oio**, **-one**, **-ore**, and in the suffix **-oso** (**-a**) the **o** is close; while in the ending **-orio**, and in **-occio** (**-a**), **-otto** (**-a**), and **-ozzo** (**-a**), used as suffixes to nouns or adjectives, it is open: as **vassôio**, *tray*; **amôre**, *love*; **romitôrio**, *hermitage*; **casôtta**, *good-sized house*.

(e) In the following cases accented **e** or **o** may have either the close or the open sound: in **Giorgio**, **maestra**, **maestro**, **nego** (from **negáre**), **neve**, **organo**, **scendere**, **senza**, **siete** and **sono** (from **êssere**), **spiegner**e, **Stefano**, **vendere**; and in the past future endings **-esti**, **-emmo**, **-este**. The present subjunctive forms **díeno**, **síeno**, **stíeno** are pronounced also **diêno**, **siêno**, **stiêno**.

(f) In poetry we often find **ê** for **iê**, **ô** for **uô**: as **vên=viêne**, *he comes*; **côr=euôre**, *heart*. Simple **ô** for **uô** is very common in modern spoken Tuscan: as **bôno** = **buôno**, *good*; **nôvo** = **nuôvo**, *new*.

4. c. (a) Between two vowels, of which the second is **e** or **i**, single **c** and single **g** are, in ordinary Tuscan speech, pronounced respectively like *sh* in ‘ship’ and *si* in ‘vision’: as **páce**, *peace*; **stagióne**, *season*.

(b) Between two vowels, of which the second is **a**, **o**, or **u**, a single **c** or a **q** is, in popular Tuscan speech, sounded nearly like English *h*: as **poco** (**pôho**), *little*; **di questa cosa** (**di hwéstâ hôsa**), *of this thing*. This pronunciation is regarded as inelegant.

j. Some writers use j, except after a consonant, for the i that is pronounced y: as *jeri* for *iêri*, *yesterday*; *pajo* for *páio*, *pair*. It is sometimes used also for final i in the plural of words in unaccented -io: as *specchj* (also *specchî* and occasionally *specchii*) for *spêcchi*, *mirrors*, plural of *spêcchio*.

z. Aside from verbs in -izzâre, z and zz have the value dz in the following words and their derivatives:

| | | | | |
|-------------|------------|-----------|----------|---------|
| arzillo | frízzo | magazzíno | románzo | zêlo |
| azzúrro | garzône | mánzo | ronzio | zenít |
| barzelléttâ | gazzellâ | mêzzo | rózzo | zêro |
| bízza | gazzétta | orizzónte | zaffíro | zêta |
| brézza | góndo | ôrzo | zaffróne | zínco |
| brónzo | Lázzaro | pênzolo | zanzára | zodíaco |
| donzêlla | lazzerétto | pránzo | zêbra | zôlla |
| dozzína | lázzo | ribrézzo | zêffiro | zôna |

also in all derivatives of the Greek *zoos*, and in many uncommon words.

5. In pronouncing **gli** and **gn** the point of the tongue should remain behind the lower teeth: as *fíglío*, *son*; *ógni*, *every*.

6. If one of the words mentioned below, or any oxytone ending in a vowel, is closely followed by a word beginning with a consonant, this consonant is, in Tuscany, generally pronounced double. The words are:¹

| | | | | |
|-----------|-----------------|-----------------|----------------|------------------|
| a | dì, day | giù | o ⁴ | sópra |
| che | di', say | ha | più | sta ² |
| chi | e | ho | qua | sto |
| ciò | è | ínfra | quálche | su |
| cóme | fa ² | íntra | qui | te ³ |
| cóntra | fè, faith | là | re | tra |
| da | fe'=féce | lì | sa | tre |
| dà, gives | fo | ma | se, if | tu |
| da', give | fra | me ³ | sè | va ² |
| do | fu | mo'=môdo | sì | vo=vádo |
| dóve | già | nè | so | vo=vôgio |

¹ The materials for this list were taken from D'Ovidio's article in Gröber's *Grundriß der romanischen Philologie*, I, p. 496 (2d ed., p. 644).

² Both the imperative sing. and the pres. ind. third sing.

³ The disjunctive form.

⁴ Both the conjunction or and the interrogative particle.

verrà da me dománi (verráddammédománi), *he will come to my house to-morrow.* In such cases c is, of course, never pronounced like h (see 4, c, (b)).

INFLECTIONS OF THE VOICE

1. Italian speech is at once smoother and less monotonous than American: it is less interrupted by breathings, and it has far greater variations of pitch. In order to speak or read Italian well, an American must learn to breathe in speaking as he does in singing; he must inhale deeply at the beginning of the clause, and not stop again until he reaches the end of it. The following directions may be of use; they are based on the Tuscan pronunciation, and particularly on that of Siena.

2. (a) The simplest inflection in a declarative sentence is as follows: at the beginning the voice is pitched low; it rises in the middle (in earnest conversation often to a falsetto), and falls again at the end. The most emphatic word generally receives the highest tone; if there are no words after it to complete the cadence, the first words of the phrase are often repeated at the end: as **me lo dícono tútti me lo dícono**, *they all tell me so*, where the u of tútti is an octave higher than the beginning and the close of the sentence.

(b) When there is a pause on some not particularly emphatic word before the main verb, that word has a slight circumflex accent, the voice rising about one semitone and falling about three: as **fuôri di cittâ ^ c' è úna bellíssima vîlla**, *outside the city there's a beautiful villa*, where **bellíssima** has the high pitch, and the a of **cittâ** has the circumflex. This accent is generally heard whenever modifying clauses or phrases precede the main clause.

(c) Almost all declarative sentences are made up chiefly of these two inflections, the long rise and fall and the short circumflex. Americans must avoid breaking up their sentences by meaningless falling tones. The fall occurs in Italian, as in English, on a very emphatic word, and at the end of a sentence. It is used, also, with a verb of saying or thinking, followed by a direct quotation;

and with any word or phrase used as a vocative, except in loud calling (see 4, b): as **allóra chiáma Alfrédo e gli díce\:** **Bambíno\,** **dímmi la veritá\,** where the syllables **fre**, **bam**, and **dim** have the highest pitch.

3. (a) Questions to which the answer may be 'yes' or 'no' have either one of two circumflex accents: in the first the voice rises about five semitones and falls one; in the second, which is sometimes used in reading and in polite phrases, the voice rises and falls about an octave. Ex.: **l'hái visto?** *have you seen him?* where the pitches of **l' hái**, **vi**, and **sto** may be represented by the notes **do**, **fa**, **mi**; **ha bén dormító?** *did you sleep well?* where **mi** is an octave higher than **dor** and **to**. The former accent may be heard in the Irish pronunciation of English.

(b) These inflections are nearly always confined to the last few syllables of the sentence. In some questions, however, they appear twice, generally occurring first on the verb; and occasionally the circumflex on the verb is the only one.

(c) Questions that cannot be answered by 'yes' or 'no' usually begin high, the pitch depending on the emphasis. The voice then falls, but generally rises again at the last syllable, going up about three semitones: as **o cóme\ hái fátto/?** *how did you do it?* This accent is common among the Irish, and may be heard in England. The final rise is, however, often omitted, especially in very short sentences and in polite phrases: as **cóme sta\?** *how do you do?*

4. (a) Exclamations of surprise begin very high, and sink rapidly: as **sénti\! no!** *un affár di niênte\!* *you don't say so!*¹ where **un** has the main stress; **per mío bácco!** *I want to know!*¹ with the accent on **per**.

(b) In calling to persons at a distance, the Tuscans sing rather than speak; the usual tune is **do**, **la**, **sol**, the accented syllable being highest: as **Agostína!** *Augustine!* **partênsa!** *all aboard!*

¹ Popular New England equivalents.

ARTICLES

9. The article is not declined, but it agrees with its noun in gender and number.

THE DEFINITE ARTICLE

10. Masculine:

(a) Sing. **il**, pl. **i**, before a word beginning with any consonant except **s** impure¹ and **z**.

(b) Sing. **lo**, pl. **gli**, before a vowel or **s** impure or **z**.²

Before a vowel **lo** becomes **l'**; **gli** becomes **gl'** before **i**.

il pádre, *the father.*

lo stésso pádre, *the same father.*

lo sciáme, *the swarm.*

lo zío, *the uncle.*

l' uômo, *the man.*

l' insêtto, *the insect.*

i pádri, *the fathers.*

gli stéssi pádri, *the same fathers.*

gli sciámi, *the swarms.*

gli zíi, *the uncles.*

gli uômini, *the men.*

gl' insêtti, *the insects.*

11. Feminine:

Sing. **la**, pl. **le**.

Before a vowel **la** becomes **l'**; **le** becomes **l'** before **e**.

la m  drea, *the mother.*

l'   ra, *the hour.*

l'   rba, *the herb.*

le m  dri, *the mothers.*

le   re, *the hours.*

l'   rbe, *the herbs.*

12. When the definite article is preceded by one of the prepositions **di**, **da**, **a**, **in**, **con**, **su**, **per**, the article and prepo-

¹ That is, **s** followed by another consonant.

² **Li** is sometimes used for **gli**. Some writers use **il**, **i** before **z** and before **sci-** or **sci-**. In poetry **lo** is often used for **il**.

sition are generally contracted into one word, as shown in the following table (**con**, **per** are often uncontracted¹):

| | il | i | lo | gli | la | le | l' |
|-----------|-----|------------|--------|---------|--------|--------|--------|
| di, of | déł | déi or de' | déllø | dégli | délla | délle | dell' |
| da, by | dal | dái or da' | dállo | dágli | dálla | dálle | dall' |
| a, to | al | ái or a' | állo | ágli | álла | álle | all' |
| in, in | néł | néi or né' | néllø | négli | nélla | nélle | nell' |
| con, with | col | cói or co' | cóllo | cógli | cólla | cólle | coll' |
| su, on | sul | súi or su' | súllo | súgli | súlla | súlle | sull' |
| per, for | péł | péi or pe' | per lo | per gli | per la | per le | per l' |

del pádre, *of the father.*

állo spéccchio, *to the mirror.*

cólla módre, *with the mother.*

sull' uômo, *on the man.*

dái pádri, *by the fathers.*

négli spécchi, *in the mirrors.*

cólle módri, *with the mothers.*

per gli uômini, *for the men.*

(a) The word *some* is frequently rendered in Italian by **di** with the definite article. This is called the *partitive construction*.

Dátemi del vino.

Give me some wine.

Délle bêlle côse.

Some fine things.

13. In the following cases the definite article is used in Italian, though not in English:

(a) Before the possessive adjectives:

Il nôstro giardíno.

Our garden.

I suôi fratelli.

His brothers.

When, however, the possessive qualifies an otherwise unmodified noun in the singular expressing relationship, the article is generally omitted: as **mía módre**, *my mother*. For a fuller statement, see 45, a.

¹ Some writers, especially poets, prefer to keep other prepositions separate from the article.

(b) Before an abstract noun or one denoting a whole class; but not before one designating a part of a class:

L' uômo propóne.
I fióri náscono dal séme.
La môrte è il peggióre déi
 máli.

*Man proposes (i.e., all mankind).
 Flowers spring from the seed (i.e.,
 all flowers).
 Death is the worst of evils (i.e.,
 death in general, and all evils).*

BUT

Il mío giardíno è tútto fio-
 ríto; rôse, gígli, viôle mán-
 dano un odore soáve.

*My garden is all in flower; roses,
 lilies, violets send forth a sweet
 fragrance (i.e., some roses, etc.).*

(c) Before a noun and adjective used either in a specific or in a general (but not in a partitive) sense:

L' ánno scórso.
Il pôvero Luígi non viêne.
Gli uômini buôni.

*Last year (i.e., the last year).
 (The) poor Lewis doesn't come.
 Good men (i.e., all good men).*

BUT

Hô trováto dappertútto uô-
 mini buôni.

*I have found (some) good men
 everywhere.*

(d) Before a title followed by a proper name:

La regína Vittôria.
Il signór Brúni.

*Queen Victoria.
 Mr. Brown.*

It is not used, however, before **Don**, **Messér**, and **Ser**.

(e) Before family names; often before familiar given names of women; occasionally before familiar given names of men:

Il Biánchi è môrto.
La Pátti cánta.
Conóscó I' Olívia.
Viêne il Tônio.

*White is dead.
 Patti sings.
 I know Olivia.
 Tony is coming.*

(f) Before names of provinces, countries, and continents:

la Toscána, *Tuscany*.
la Svízzerá, *Switzerland*.

*all' Italia, to Italy.
 per l' Eurôpa, for Europe.*

But the article is omitted after **in** in phrases that denote going to or dwelling in a country; and often after **di** or **in** when the

preposition with the name of a country is equivalent to an adjective of nationality:

| | |
|---------------------------|---|
| Vádo in Germánia. | <i>I go to Germany.</i> |
| Rimango in Fráncia. | <i>I remain in France.</i> |
| La regína d' Inghiltêrra. | <i>The queen of England</i> (<i>i.e.</i> , the English queen). |
| Il víno di Spágna. | <i>The wine of Spain</i> (<i>i.e.</i> , Spanish wine). |
| Il teátro in Itália. | <i>The drama in Italy</i> (<i>i.e.</i> , the Italian drama). |

The article is not used regularly with names of cities: as *vedrémo Róma*, *we shall see Rome*. **La** Spêzia, however, has the article; and so have a few others.

In all the above cases (beginning with 13, a) the article, unless it would be employed in English, is omitted when the noun is used as a vocative or is modified by a numeral or a pronominal adjective. It is often omitted in lists.

| | |
|--------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| Signóra Mónti, cóme sta? | <i>Mrs. Monti, how do you do?</i> |
| Itália, ti rivédo. | <i>Italy, I see thee again.</i> |
| Viéni, amíco mío. | <i>Come, my friend.</i> |
| Dúe bellíssimi cáni. | <i>Two very fine dogs.</i> |
| Quéstá súa ópera. | <i>This work of his.</i> |
| Ha paréchchi vízi. | <i>He has several bad habits.</i> |
| Féde, speránza, caritâ. | <i>Faith, hope, and charity.</i> |

THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE

14. Masculine:

- (a) **Un** before a vowel or any consonant except **s** impure and **z**.
- (b) **Uno** before **s** impure or **z**.¹

| | |
|-----------------------------|--------------------------------|
| un pádre, <i>a father.</i> | un uômo, <i>a man.</i> |
| un anêllo, <i>a ring.</i> | úno spêcchio, <i>a mirror.</i> |
| úno sciáme, <i>a swarm.</i> | úno zío, <i>an uncle.</i> |

Note that masculine **un** before a vowel has no apostrophe.

¹ Some writers use **un** before **z** and before **sce-** or **sci-**.

15. Feminine:

Una, which becomes **un'** before a vowel.

16. In the following cases the indefinite article, though expressed in English, is omitted in Italian:

(a) Before a predicate noun expressing occupation, condition, rank, or nationality, and not accompanied by an adjective.

Égli è poëta, he is a poet. **Sóno marchése, I am a marquis.**
Siête italiáno, you are an Italian. **È mèdico, he is a doctor.**

(b) Generally before an antecedent (of a relative clause) used in apposition to a preceding noun modified by a definite article or a demonstrative pronoun.

L' Árno, fiúme che travêrsa
Firênze. *The Arno, a river which traverses Florence.*

(c) After **da** meaning *as, like, or for*. See 79, g.

Da uômo. *Like a man.*

NOUNS

17. Italian nouns are not declined. Possession is denoted by the preposition **di**:

Lo spêcchio di mio pâdre. *My father's looking-glass.*

GENDER

18. There are no neuter nouns in Italian.¹

Nouns denoting males and females keep their natural gender; except **creatúra**, *creature*; **guída**, *guide*; **guárdia**,

¹ Latin neutrals become masculine in Italian; masculines and feminines retain their Latin gender. This rule has very few exceptions.

guard; persôna, person; sentinelha, sentinel; spia, spy; staf-fetta, courier; vedetta, scout; which are feminine.

il fratello, *the brother.*

il poeta, *the poet.*

una spia, *a spy.*

mia sorella, *my sister.*

la poetessa, *the poetess.*

la nostra guida, *our guide.*

19. Of nouns denoting objects without sex some are masculine, some feminine. Their gender can often be determined by the final letter. All Italian nouns end in -a, -e, -i, -o, or -u:¹

(a) Those ending in -a are feminine; except colera, cholera; qualcosa, *something*; Greek neuters in -ma,² many geographical names, and a few other words, mostly foreign.

un' ora, *an hour.*

il Canadà, *Canada.*

un telegramma, *a telegram.*

il sofà, *the sofa.*

(b) Of those ending in -e and -i some are masculine, some feminine. All ending in -zíone, -gióne, or -údine are feminine.

il fiúme, *the river.*

un dì, *a day.*

la ragiòne, *the reason.*

la páce, *peace.*

una metròpoli, *a metropolis.*

la servitúdine, *service.*

(c) Those ending in -o are masculine; except mano, *hand.*

il ginôcchio, *the knee.*

la mano, *the hand.*

(d) Those ending in -u are feminine; except soprappiù, *surplus*, and a few foreign words.

la virtù, *virtue.*

il bambù, *bamboo.*

20. Any other part of speech (except an adjective³) used as a noun must be masculine: as il viaggiáre, *traveling.*

21. Masculine names of trees in -o or -e have a feminine form in -a or -e respectively, denoting their fruit; but il dát-

¹ A few foreign nouns used in Italian end in a consonant: as lápis, pencil (i lápis, *the pencils*). Nouns in -o or -e often drop that vowel if the preceding consonant is l, n, or r: as cáne =can, dog.

² Mostly scientific terms.

³ Adjectives of course have the gender of the nouns they represent. An adjective used as an abstract noun is masculine: il bêllo, *the beautiful* =beauty.

tero, date, il fíco, fig, il limóne, lemon, il pómø, apple, are always the same, whether denoting the tree or the fruit.

un susíno, a plum tree.

úna susína, a plum.

il nóce, the walnut tree.

la nóce, the walnut.

quéstí fíchi, these fig trees, these figs.

NUMBER

22. Feminines in unaccented **a** form their plural by changing **a** into **e**.

la stráda, the street.

le stráde, the streets.

úna bugía, a lie.

le bugié, lies.

(a) Feminines in **-ca** and **-ga** form their plural in **-che** and **-ghe** respectively (the **h** being inserted merely to indicate that the **c** and **g** keep their hard sound).

un' ôca, a goose.

mólte ôche, many geese.

la bottéga, the shop.

paréchie bottéghe, several shops.

(b) Nouns in unaccented **-cia** and **-gia** form their plural in **-ce** and **-ge** respectively.¹

la guáncia, the cheek.

le guánce, the cheeks.

úna ciliégia, a cherry.

tánté ciliége, so many cherries.

23. Masculines in unaccented **-a** and all nouns in unaccented **-o** and **-e** (not **-ie**) form their plural in **-i**.²

un poëta, a poet.

dúe poëti, two poets.

lo zío, the uncle.

gli zíi, the uncles.

la máno, the hand.

le míe máni, my hands.

un mése, a month.

tre mési, three months.

la corníce, the frame.

quáttro corníci, four frames.

(a) Masculines in **-ca** and **-ga** form their plural in **-chi** and **-ghi** respectively.

il monárca, the monarch.

i monárchi, the monarchs.

il colléga, the colleague.

i collèghi, the colleagues.

¹ Província has províncie. In general borrowed words and words whose plural is necessarily very rare keep the i: audácia, audácie.

² In old Italian and in poetry words in -ello and -ale often form their plural in -egli or -ei, -agli or -ai: capéllo, capégli; animále, animái.

(b) Nouns in unaccented -io form their plural by changing -io to -i (often written i, j, or ii).

| | |
|--------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| lo spêcchio, <i>the mirror.</i> | gli spêcchi, <i>the mirrors.</i> |
| il ciliêgio, <i>the cherry tree.</i> | i ciliêgi, <i>the cherry trees.</i> |

(c) Nouns in -go form their plural in -ghi. Nouns in -co form their plural in -chi if the penult is accented, otherwise in -ci.

| | |
|------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| il castígo, <i>the punishment.</i> | i castíghi, <i>the punishments.</i> |
| un catâlogo, <i>a catalogue.</i> | dûe catâloghi, <i>two catalogues.</i> |
| il fíco, <i>the fig.</i> | cíque fíchi, <i>five figs.</i> |
| antíco, <i>ancient.</i> | gli antíchi, <i>the ancients.</i> |
| un mêsico, <i>a doctor.</i> | sêi mêsici, <i>six doctors.</i> |

This rule has a number of exceptions. In the following lists, words whose irregular plural is rare are omitted.

1. Compound nouns in -logo denoting persons engaged in the sciences, and all compound nouns in -fago form their plural in -gi.¹

| | |
|--|------------------------------------|
| il fisiôlogo, <i>the physiologist.</i> | i fisiôlogi, <i>physiologists.</i> |
| antropôfago, <i>cannibal.</i> | antropôfagi, <i>cannibals.</i> |

2. The following words form their plural in -ci, although the penult is accented:

| | | | | |
|-------|-------|---------|--------|--------------------|
| amíco | grêco | inimíco | nemíco | pôrco ² |
|-------|-------|---------|--------|--------------------|

Grêco has a regular plural in the expression víni grêchi.

3. The following words form their plural in -chi, although the penult is unaccented:

| | | | | |
|------------------------|------------|----------|-----------|---------------------|
| âbbaco | fârmaco | lâstrico | rammárico | strâscico |
| acrôstico | indaco | mânico | rísico | tôssico |
| cárlico ³ | intônaco | pârroco | sciático | träffico |
| diméntico ³ | intrínseco | pízzico | stômaco | válico ⁴ |

Acrôstico and fârmaco have also regular plurals.

¹ Likewise the rare or obsolete words: flemmagôgo, idragôgo, metallúrgo, sárgo (also reg. plur.), sortilego. Magicians = mághi; Magi = mági.

² Likewise the rare words: apríco, lombríco (also reg.), uvamíco, víco.

³ Likewise its compounds.

⁴ Likewise the rare or obsolete words: filáccico, mántaco (also reg.), ostático, sfilác-cico, stático (noun), úncico.

(d) The following masculines in **-o** have an irregular plural in **-a** which is feminine:

centináio, *hundred.*
migliáio, *thousand.*

míglia, *mile.*
páio, *pair.*

uôvo, *egg.*

Many masculines in **-o** have this irregular feminine plural in **-a** besides the regular masculine plural in **-i**. The most common are:

bráccio, *arm.*
dító, *finger.*
frútto, *fruit.*
ginôcchio, *knee.*

un páio, *a pair.*
il mío bráccio, *my arm.*
il lábbro, *the lip.*
un ôsso, *a bone.*

grído, *shout.*
lábbro, *lip.*
légno, *wood.*
mêmbro, *member.*

sêtte páia, *seven pairs.*
le túe bráccia, *thy arms.*
le lábba or i lábbri, *the lips.*
le ôssa or gli ôssi, *the bones.*

múro, *wall.*
orécchio, *ear.*
ôsso, *bone.*

Bráccio, **ginôcchio**, **lábbro**, and **orécchio** nearly always have the irregular plural when denoting the two *arms*, *knees*, *lips*, or *ears* belonging to the same body.

24. All monosyllables, and all nouns ending in **-i**, **-ie**, **-u**, an accented vowel, or a consonant, are invariable.

il re, *the king.*
il bríndisi, *the toast.*
úna spécie, *a kind.*
la virtù, *virtue.*
úna città, *a city.*
l' ômnibus, *the omnibus.*

i re, *the kings.*
i bríndisi, *the toasts.*
ôtto spécie, *eight kinds*
le virtù, *the virtues.*
diêci città, *ten cities.*
gli ômnibus, *the omnibusses.*

25. The following nouns have irregular plurals:

búe, *ox*, pl. **buôi**.
dío, *god*, pl. **dêi**.¹

môglie, *wife*, pl. **môgli**.
uômo, *man*, pl. **uômini**.

¹ The article used with **dêi** is *gli*: *gli dêi*.

ADJECTIVES

26. Adjectives agree with their nouns in gender and number. An adjective modifying two nouns of different genders is generally put in the masculine plural.

| | |
|---------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| Il gátto è pulító. | <i>The cat is neat.</i> |
| Stánze pulíté. | <i>Neat rooms.</i> |
| Una cása e un giardíno bellíni. | <i>A pretty house and garden.</i> |
| La ragázza è bellína. | <i>The girl is pretty.</i> |

27. Numeral and pronominal adjectives, **bêllo**, **brávo**, **buôno**, and the commonest adjectives of size and quantity, precede their nouns. Adjectives of nationality, shape, and material follow.

Adjectives whose use is prompted by emotion, and adjectives used in a figurative sense, generally precede.

Otherwise, of the noun and adjective, the one that contains the chief idea comes last.

| | |
|---------------------------------|---------------------------|
| Due cáni. | <i>Two dogs.</i> |
| Trôppo páne. | <i>Too much bread.</i> |
| La buôna mádre. | <i>The good mother.</i> |
| Le grândi cittâ. | <i>Great cities.</i> |
| Un libro francése. | <i>A French book.</i> |
| Quésta pálla rotônda. | <i>This round ball.</i> |
| Pôver' uômo! | <i>Poor man!</i> |
| Úna néra menzôgna. | <i>A black falsehood.</i> |
| La vôstra gentilíssima lêttera. | <i>Your kind letter.</i> |
| È un uômo gentilíssimo. | <i>He is a kind man.</i> |

GENDER AND NUMBER

28. Adjectives ending in **-o** are masculine, and form their feminine in **-a**. Adjectives in **-e** are invariable in the singular.

| | |
|-------------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| buôno stivaléttó, <i>good boot.</i> | buôna scárpa, <i>good shoe.</i> |
| ragázzo felíce, <i>happy boy.</i> | ragázza felíce, <i>happy girl.</i> |

29. Adjectives form their plural in the same way as nouns (see **22, 23**): -o, pl. -i; -a, pl. -e; -e, pl. always -i.

sei buôni cassettoni, *six good bureaus.* ôtto buône sêggiole, *eight good chairs.*

dûe uômini felici, *two happy men.* tre dónne felici, *three happy women.*

(a) **Parécchi**, *several*, has for its feminine **parécchie**.

(b) **Quálche**, *some*, is used only in the singular, even when the meaning is plural: as **quálche vólta**, *sometimes*.

(c) When preceding a noun, **bêllo**, *beautiful*, has forms similar to those of the definite article; and **Sânto**, *Saint*, and **grânde**, *great*, have corresponding forms in the singular.¹ **Buôno**, *good*, when preceding its noun, has a singular similar to the indefinite article. The masculine of these words (which is the only irregular part) is, therefore, as follows:

Before any consonant except s impure or z: bêl, San, gran, buon; pl. bêi, Sânti, grândi, buôni.

Before s impure or z: bêllo, Sânto, grânde, buôno; pl. bêgli, Sânti, grândi, buôni.

Before a vowel: bell', Sant', grand', buon; pl. bêgli, Sânti, grândi, buôni.

When used *after* a noun or in the predicate these adjectives have their full forms (**bêllo**, **bêlli**, **Sânto**, **Sânti**, **grânde**, **grândi**, **buôno**, **buôni**).

| | |
|-------------------------|-------------------------------|
| Un bêl quádro. | <i>A fine picture.</i> |
| Dûe bêi lëtti. | <i>Two fine beds.</i> |
| Un bêllo scaffále. | <i>A fine bookcase.</i> |
| Quâttro bêgli stiváli. | <i>Four fine boots.</i> |
| Un bêll' ándito. | <i>A fine hall.</i> |
| Môlti bêgli orolôgi. | <i>Many fine clocks.</i> |
| Una bêlla stúfa. | <i>A fine stove.</i> |
| Paréecchie bêlle tênde. | <i>Several fine curtains.</i> |
| Il palázzo è bêllo. | <i>The palace is fine.</i> |

¹ **Gran** is, moreover, often used in the fem. sing. (for **grânde**), and sometimes in the plur. (for **grândi**); it is regularly used before fem. sing. nouns in -e, and in the expression **úna gran bêlla** (or **brútta**) **côsa**. **Grânde**, on the other hand, is occasionally used for **gran**.

| | |
|---|---|
| Le sêdie son bêlle. | <i>The chairs are beautiful.</i> |
| San Piêtro, Sânto Stêfano e Sant' Antônio. | <i>St. Peter, St. Stephen, and St. Anthony.</i> |
| Un gran fuôco. | <i>A big fire.</i> |
| Grândi camíni. | <i>Big fireplaces.</i> |
| Il grânde scaldíno. | <i>The big foot-warmer.</i> |
| Diêci grândi spilli. | <i>Ten big pins.</i> |
| Un grânde sciáme. | <i>A great swarm.</i> |
| Il grânde zípolo. | <i>The large bung.</i> |
| Un grand' armádio. | <i>A big wardrobe.</i> |
| Vénti grândi álberi. | <i>Twenty big trees.</i> |
| Úna grânde cámara. | <i>A large bedroom.</i> |
| Cinque grândi finêstre. | <i>Five big windows.</i> |
| Il salôtto è móltô grânde. | <i>The parlor is very large.</i> |
| Un buôñ lúme. | <i>A good lamp.</i> |
| Buôni fiammíferi. | <i>Good matches.</i> |
| Il buôño sgabêllo. | <i>The good stool.</i> |
| Nôve buôni scolári. | <i>Nine good pupils.</i> |
| Il buôñ ôlio. | <i>The good oil.</i> |
| Parécchi buôni ághi. | <i>Several good needles.</i> |
| Úna buôna cucína. | <i>A good kitchen.</i> |
| Le buône candéle. | <i>The good candles.</i> |
| Il bambíno è buôño. | <i>The child is good.</i> |

30. Any adjective of either gender or either number may be used as a noun.

I buôni, *the good.*

la bêlla, *the beautiful woman.*

COMPARISON

31. All Italian adjectives form their comparative by prefixing **più**, *more*, and their superlative by prefixing the definite article to the comparative.

bêllo, *beautiful*; **più** bêllo, *more beautiful*; **il più** bêllo, *the most beautiful.*

lúngo, *long*; **più** lúngo, *longer*; **il più** lúngo, *the longest.*

When the superlative immediately follows the noun, this article is omitted.

La vía **più** córta.

The shortest way.

(a) The following adjectives have an irregular comparison in addition to the regular one:

alto, *high*; più alto or *superiore*; il più alto or *il superiore*.
 bássso, *low*; più bássso or *inferiore*; il più bássso or *l' inferiore*.
 buôno, *good*; più buôno or *miglióre*¹; il più buôno or *il miglióre*.
 cattívo, *bad*; più cattívo or *peggióre*¹; il più cattívo or *il peggioré*.
 grânde, *big*; più grânde or *maggióre*; il più grânde or *il maggióre*.
 píccolo, *small*; più píccolo or *minóre*; il più píccolo or *il minóre*.

Higher and *lower* are commonly rendered by **più alto** and **più bássso**; *superiore* and *inferiore* generally mean *superior* and *inferior*. *Miglióre* and *peggióre* are more used than **più buôno** and **più cattívo**, which have the same sense. *Larger* and *smaller* are generally **più grânde** and **più píccolo**; *maggióre* and *minóre* usually signify *older* and *younger*.

| | |
|------------------------------|---|
| Noi siámo miglióri di lóro. | <i>We are better than they.</i> |
| Quésta sála da pránzo è la | <i>This dining room is the biggest.</i> |
| più grânde. | |
| Piêtro è il fratêllo minóre. | <i>Peter is the youngest brother.</i> |

32. The adverb *less* is expressed by **méno**, *least* by **il méno**. *As . . . as*, *so . . . as* are **tânto . . . quânto**, **tânto . . . cóme**, **così . . . cóme**, or simply **quânto**.

| | |
|---------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| Quélla stánza è la méno | <i>That room is the least pretty.</i> |
| bellína. | |
| Páolo non è tânto buôno cóme | <i>Paul isn't so good as Robert.</i> |
| Robêrto. | |
| Giovânni è áltô quânto Filíppo. | <i>John is as tall as Philip.</i> |

33. *Than* is *che*.

| | |
|-----------------------------|---|
| L' albêrgo è più grânde che | <i>The hotel is bigger than it is beauti-</i> |
| bêllo. | <i>tiful.</i> |

But before a noun, a pronoun, or a numeral *than* is rendered by the preposition **di** (see 12).

| | |
|------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| Riccárdo è peggioré di me. | <i>Richard is worse than I.</i> |
| Vói siête più ríechi del re. | <i>You are richer than the king.</i> |
| Méno di cíngue. | <i>Less than five.</i> |

¹ The adverbs *better* and *worse* are *mêglîo* and *pêggîo*.

If, however, this *than* is preceded by a word meaning *rather*, it is translated **che**.

Piuttosto la môrte **che** il disonore. *Rather death than dishonor.*

Before an inflected verb *than* is **che non** or **di quel che**.
If the verb has a negative subject, *than* is **che**.

Abbáia più **che non** môrde. *He barks more than he bites.*

Prométto méno **di quel che** do. *I promise less than I give.*

Più liéto **che** nessún figlio lo
éra státo. *Happier than any son had been.*

34. The more . . . the more, the less . . . the less, are **più . . . più**, **méno . . . méno**. *More* and *less* after a number are **di più**, **di méno**. In speaking of time, *longer* after a negative is **più**.

| | |
|-------------------------|--|
| Più stúdio, più impáro. | <i>The more I study, the more I learn.</i> |
| Trénta giórni di méno. | <i>Thirty days less.</i> |
| Non lo vediámo più. | <i>We see him no longer.</i> |

AUGMENTATIVES AND DIMINUTIVES; NUMERALS

AUGMENTATIVE AND DIMINUTIVE ENDINGS

35. Instead of a word expressing size or quality, the Italians often use a suffix. This suffix may be added to a noun, an adjective, or an adverb. When added to an adjective, it is generally when added to a noun, it takes the gender of the word to which it is affixed: occasionally, however, a suffix with masculine termination is added to a feminine noun, which thereby becomes masculine. A word loses its final vowel before a suffix; but the preceding consonant, if it be c or g, must keep its former quality: as Cárlo+íno=Carlínó, véoce+ónce=vociónne, pôco+íno=pochínó, adágio+íno=adagíno.

(a) The commonest ending is **-íssimo** (fem. **-íssima**), *very*, which in general is added only to adjectives and adverbs. Adverbs in **-ménite** add the **-íssima** before the **-ménite** (see 85). Any adjective may take it, and it is very often used in cases where it would be entirely superfluous in English.

| | |
|---|--|
| <i>largo</i> , <i>wide</i> . | <i>lorghíssimo</i> , <i>very wide</i> . |
| <i>bene</i> , <i>well</i> . | <i>beníssimo</i> , <i>very well</i> . |
| <i>grande</i> , <i>big</i> . | <i>grandíssimo</i> , <i>very big</i> . |
| <i>fa un tempo bellíssimo</i> , <i>it's beautiful weather</i> . | <i>bellissimaménte</i> , <i>very beautifully</i> . |

(b) The principal suffix denoting bigness is **-óne**; it is always masculine, but has a rare feminine form, **-óna**.

| | |
|-----------------------------------|---|
| <i>libro</i> , <i>book</i> . | <i>un libróne</i> , <i>a big book</i> . |
| <i>casa</i> , <i>house</i> . | <i>un casóne</i> , <i>a large house</i> . |
| <i>boccia</i> , <i>decanter</i> . | <i>úna boccióna</i> , <i>a big decanter</i> . |

(c) The most important suffixes denoting smallness are **-íno**, **-cíno**, **-icíno**, **-iccíno**, **-étto**, **-êllo**, **-cêllo**, **-kêllo**, **-arêllo**, **-erêllo**, **-ôtto**, **-úccio**, **-úzzo**, **-uôlo**, with their fem. **-ína**, etc. These endings, especially **-úccio**, are often used to express affection; some of them may be used to express pity or contempt. *Otto* sometimes means *somewhat large* instead of *small*.

| | |
|-----------------------------------|---|
| <i>sorêlla</i> , <i>sister</i> . | <i>sorellína</i> , <i>little sister</i> . |
| <i>bêllo</i> , <i>beautiful</i> . | <i>bellíno</i> , <i>pretty</i> . |
| <i>brútto</i> , <i>ugly</i> . | <i>bruttíno</i> , <i>rather ugly</i> . |
| <i>piázza</i> , <i>square</i> . | <i>piazzéッta</i> , <i>little square</i> . |
| <i>Giôrgio</i> , <i>George</i> . | <i>Giorgéッto</i> , <i>Georgie</i> . |
| <i>campâna</i> , <i>bell</i> . | <i>campanêllo</i> , <i>little bell</i> . |
| <i>áquila</i> , <i>eagle</i> . | <i>aquilôtto</i> , <i>eaglet</i> . |
| <i>cása</i> , <i>house</i> . | <i>easôtta</i> , <i>rather large house</i> . |
| <i>Giovánni</i> , <i>John</i> . | <i>Giovannúccio</i> , <i>dear little Johnny</i> . |
| <i>pázzo</i> , <i>mad</i> . | <i>pazzarêlla</i> , <i>poor mad woman</i> . |
| <i>pôvero</i> , <i>poor</i> . | <i>poveríni</i> , <i>poor things</i> ! |

(d) The ending **-áccio** denotes worthlessness.

| | |
|-------------------------------------|--|
| <i>rôba</i> , <i>stuff, goods</i> . | <i>robâccia</i> , <i>trash</i> . |
| <i>têmpo</i> , <i>weather</i> . | <i>tempâccio</i> , <i>nasty weather</i> . |
| <i>Alfrêdo</i> , <i>Alfred</i> . | <i>Alfredâccio</i> , <i>naughty Alfred</i> . |

36. Of the endings added to nouns *-íno* is by far the most common; the only ones that are freely used to form new compounds are *-íno*, *little*, *-óne*, *great*, *-úccio*, *dear*, and *-áccio*, *bad*. In very many cases, endings lose their character of independent suffixes, and become inseparable parts of certain words, whose meanings they often change: as *scála*, *stairway*; *scalíno*, *stair*; *scaléttó*, *ladder*. So *brother*, *sister* are always *fratélló*, *sorélla*. Some suffixes (as *-uôlo*) are rarely used except in this way. Others (as *-cíno*, *-icíno*, *-êllo*, *-cêllo*, *-icêllo*, *-arêllo*, *-erêllo*) cannot be attached to any word at pleasure, their use being determined by precedent or euphony.

37. Sometimes several suffixes are added at once to the same word: as *ládro*, *thief*; *ladróne*, *terrible thief*; *ladroncêllo*, *terrible little thief*.

NUMERALS

38. The cardinal numerals are:

| | | | |
|------------------|------------------------------|--------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| 1, úno. | 15, quíndici. | 28, ventôtto or vent' ôtto. | 101, centúno or cent' úno. |
| 2, dûe. | 16, sédici. | 29, ventinôve. | 105, centocínque. |
| 3, tre. | 17, diciassête. | 30, trénta. | 115, centoquíndici. |
| 4, quâtro. | 18, diciôtto. | 31, trentúno or trent' úno. | 125, cento venti- cínque. |
| 5, cíngue. | 19, diciannôve. | 32, trentadûe. | 200, dugênto or duecênto. |
| 6, sêi. | 20, vénti. | 40, quarânta. | 250, dugênto cin- quânta. |
| 7, sétte. | 21, ventúno or vent' úno. | 50, cinquânta. | 300, trecênto. |
| 8, ôtto. | 22, ventidûe. | 60, sessânta. | 400, quattrocênto. |
| 9, nôve. | 23, ventitrè. | 70, settânta. | 1000, mîlle. |
| 10, diêci. | 24, ventiquâtto. | 80, ottânta. | 2000, dûe mîla. |
| 11, úndici. | 25, venticínque. | 90, novânta. | |
| 12, dôdici. | 26, ventisêi. | 100, cênto. | |
| 13, trédici. | 27, ventisête. | | |
| 14, quattôrdici. | | | |

Úno has a feminine **úna**; when used *adjectively* it has the same forms as the indefinite article; so also **ventúno**, etc.

The plural of **mílle** is **míla**. *A million* is un milióne or mil-
lióne, of which the plural is milióni or millióni.

1. No conjunction is used between the different parts of a number: as **dugênto quarânta**, *two hundred and forty*. No indefinite article is used before **cênto** and **mille**: as **cênto lîbri**, *a hundred books*.

2. **Cênto**, **dugênto**, etc., when followed by another numeral of more than two syllables may lose the final syllable **-to**: as **seicênto** **cinquânta** or **seicencinquânta**, *six hundred and fifty*.

3. *Eleven hundred, twelve hundred*, etc., must be rendered **millecento**, **mille dugento**, etc.: as **mille ottocento ottantasei**, 1887.

4. *Both, all three, etc.*, are tútti (fem. tútte) e dúe, tútti (fem. tútte) e tre, etc.

(a) If the noun modified by *ventúno*, *trentúno*, etc., follows this numeral, it is regularly in the singular; as *trentún giórno*, *thirty-one days*. Sometimes, however, the noun precedes the numeral, and then it is in the plural.

Sessantúna líra, or líre sessantúna. *Sixty-one francs.*

(b) In dates the definite article is prefixed to the number representing the year, if that number does not follow the name of a month. For instance, 1915 is **il 1915**.

Nel mille ottocento ottanta-
sette. *In* 1887.

(c) *What time is it?* is **che óra è?** or **che óre sóno?** *It is six, etc.,* is **sóno le séi**, etc., **óre** being understood. *One o'clock* is **il tócco**.

Són le dûe e mèzzo. *It's half past two.*

Sóno le tre e dijeci. It's ten minutes past three.

Ci máncano vénti minuti álle quattro.
It's twenty minutes past three.

Sóno le cíngue méno un quárto. *It's a quarter to five.*

39. The ordinal numerals are:

| | | |
|---|---|---|
| 1st, <i>primo</i> . | 12th, <i>duodécimo</i> or <i>décimo secundo</i> . | 20th, <i>ventésimo</i> . |
| 2d, <i>segundo</i> . | | 21st, <i>ventésimo primo</i> or <i>ventunésimo</i> . |
| 3d, <i>térzo</i> . | 13th, <i>tredicésimo</i> or <i>décimo térzo</i> . | 22d, <i>ventésimo segundo</i> or <i>ventiduésimo</i> . |
| 4th, <i>quárto</i> . | | 30th, <i>trentésimo</i> . |
| 5th, <i>quínto</i> . | 14th, <i>quattordicésimo</i> or <i>décimo quárto</i> . | 100th, <i>centésimo</i> . |
| 6th, <i>sêsto</i> . | | 101st, <i>centésimo primo</i> . |
| 7th, <i>séttimo</i> . | 15th, <i>quindicésimo</i> or <i>décimo quínto</i> . | 115th, <i>centoquindicésimo</i> . |
| 8th, <i>ottávo</i> . | | 200th, <i>dugentésimo</i> . |
| 9th, <i>nôno</i> . | 16th, <i>décimo sêsto</i> . | 1000th, <i>millésimo</i> . |
| 10th, <i>dêcimo</i> . | 17th, <i>décimo séttimo</i> . | 2000th, <i>duemilésimo</i> . |
| 11th, <i>undêcimo</i> or <i>dêcimo primo</i> . | 18th, <i>décimo ottávo</i> . | |
| | 19th, <i>décimo nôno</i> . | |

All of them form their feminines and plurals like other adjectives in **-o**.

Le settantésime quinte cose. *The 75th things.*

(a) Ordinal numerals are used after the words *book*, *chapter*, and the names of rulers; but no article intervenes.

| | |
|--------------------------|----------------------------|
| Cárlo <i>segundo</i> . | <i>Charles the Second.</i> |
| Pío <i>nôno</i> . | <i>Pius IX.</i> |
| Líbro <i>térzo</i> . | <i>Book the Third.</i> |
| Capítulo <i>quárto</i> . | <i>Chapter four.</i> |

(b) For the day of the month, except the first, a cardinal number is used.

| | |
|--|----------------------------|
| Il dì <i>cinque</i> d' aprile or il <i>cinque</i> aprile. | <i>The fifth of April.</i> |
| Il <i>primo</i> di mággio. | <i>The first of May.</i> |

(c) *The fourteenth century* is *il sécolo décimo quárto* or *il Trecento* (*i. e.* *mille trecênto*). *Il Dugênto*, *il Quattrocênto*, *il Cinquecênto* are often used for the 13th, 15th, and 16th centuries, and the later century names may be similarly abbreviated.

(d) *A third, a fourth, a fifth*, etc., are *un térzo*, *un quárto*, *un quínto*, etc. *Half* is *la metà*; the adjective *half* is *mêzzo*.

40. *A couple or a pair* is **un páio**. *A dozen* is **úna dozína**. The expressions **úna decína**, **úna ventína**, **úna trentína**, etc., **un centináio**, **un migliáio**, mean *about ten*, *about twenty*, etc. (see **23, d**). *Once, twice*, etc., are **úna vólta**, **dúe vólte**, etc.

Ún páio di scárpe.

A pair of shoes.

Úna cinquantína di persóne.

Some fifty persons.

L' ho vísto parécchie vólte.

I've seen it several times.

DEMONSTRATIVE, INTERROGATIVE, RELATIVE, AND POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS

41. For the indefinite pronouns, see **86–91**.

42. 1. The demonstratives used adjectively are **quésto**,¹ *this*, and **quéllo** or **cotéstó**, *that*. **Cotéstó** (also **codéstó**) is used of objects associated with the person addressed. **Quéstó** and **cotéstó** are inflected like other adjectives; but they generally drop **o** before a vowel. **Quéllo** is inflected like **bêllo** (see **29, c**).

quést' uômo, *this man.*

quéste ragázze, *these girls.*

quél bambíno, *that infant.*

quéi fanciúlli, *those children.*

quéll' amíco, *that friend.*

quégli spôsi, *that couple.*

quéllo zío, *that uncle.*

quélle signôre, *those ladies.*

Quéstó and **quéllo** are also used substantively for *this*, *that*, *this one*, *that one*: as **fáte** **quésto**, **non** **fáte** **quéllo**, *do this, don't do that.*

2. *This man* is translated by **quésti**; *that man* by **quégli**, **quéi**, or **cotéstí** (rare); these words are invariable, refer only to persons, and are used only in the nominative singular. **Costúi** and **colúi** mean respectively the same as **quésti** and

¹ In archaic or literary Italian **éssò** is sometimes used for **quésto**.

quégli, but are not defective, having a feminine singular costéi, coléi, and a plural (both genders alike) costóro, colóro. Costúi is often used in a depreciative sense.

| | |
|--|---|
| Quéstí è francése e quégli è tedéscio. | <i>This man is French and that one is German.</i> |
| Chi è costúi? | <i>Who is this fellow?</i> |
| Párlo di colúi. | <i>I speak of that man.</i> |

3. *Ciò, this, that,* is invariable, and represents a whole idea, not a single word:

| | |
|-------------|-------------------|
| Ciò è véro. | <i>That's so.</i> |
|-------------|-------------------|

(a) Quéllo and quéstó, quégli and quéstí mean also *the former, the latter.*

(b) *He who* is colúi che, or simply chi. *The one who, whom, which, that which, what,* is quéllo che or quél che.

| | |
|---------------------------------|--------------------------|
| Chi lavóra or colúi che lavóra. | <i>He who works.</i> |
| Quél che díco io. | <i>The one I mean.</i> |
| A quél che sênto. | <i>From what I hear.</i> |

43. The interrogative *who, whom,* is chi. *What?* used substantively is che, che côsa, or côsa.¹ *What?* used adjectively is che or quále. *Which?* is quále.

Quále has a plural quáli; chi and che are invariable. *How much?* is quánto (-a); *how many?* is quânti (-e).

| | |
|-------------------------------------|---|
| Chi védo? | <i>Whom do I see?</i> |
| Di chi parláte? | <i>Of whom do you speak?</i> |
| Dítemi chi viéne. | <i>Tell me who is coming.</i> |
| Che vôgliono? | <i>What do they want?</i> |
| Che côsa díce? | <i>What does he say?</i> |
| Che or quáli líbri avéte com-práto? | <i>What books did you buy?</i> |
| Quále di quéstí volúmi è il prímo? | <i>Which of these volumes is the first?</i> |
| Quânte vólte te l'ho détto! | <i>How many times I have told you!</i> |

¹ Côsa (as côsa díce?) is generally avoided in written Italian. Note that chi is used in indirect as well as in direct questions.

(a) The interrogative *whose* is **di chi**.

Di chi è quésto bigliéttó? *Whose card is this?*

(b) In exclamations *what a*, *what* are rendered by **che** or **quéále** without any article.

Che bél paése! *What a beautiful country!*

44. The principal relative pronouns are **che**, **cúi**, **il quéále**: they are all applied to both persons and things, and mean *who*, *whom*, *which*, or *that*. **Il quéále** is inflected (**la quéále**, **i quéáli**, **le quéáli**). **Che** and **cúi** are invariable: in general **che** is used only as subject and direct object, **cúi** only after prepositions or as indirect object. In poetry **ónde** is often used to signify *of which* or *from which*.

La língua **che** si párla. *The language which we speak.*

L' uômo **del quéále** si trátta. *The man of whom we are speaking.*

Le persóne **a cúi** or **álle quéáli**
párlo. *The persons to whom I speak.*

Lo scrítto **di cúi** párlo. *The work I am speaking of.*

1. As subject or direct object **che** is preferred to **il quéále**, unless clearness requires the latter.

Ie fíglie **che** stúdiano. *The daughters who are studying.*

Le fíglie dégli Americáni, **le**
quéáli stúdiano. *The Americans' daughters, who are
studying.*

2. The relative *whose* is **il cúi** or **del quéále**.

Úna signóra, **il** **cúi** nóme è
Lucía. *A lady whose name is Lucy.*

Un uômo, **le** **cúi** fíglie conó-
sco. *A man whose daughters I know.*

L' autóre, **del** **cúi** libro si
párla. *The author whose book we are
speaking of.*

Le chiêse délle **quéáli** si védono
le cúpole. *The churches whose domes we see.*

3. The relative cannot be omitted in Italian.

Le cásé **che** ho compráte. *The houses I have bought.*

(a) *Such . . . as* is **tále** . . . **quále**; in poetry **tále**, **quále** have a plural **tái**, **quái** instead of **táli**, **quálí**. *As much as* is **tánto** **quánto**; *as many as* is **tánti** **quánti**.

Quále è il párde **tále** è il fíglío. *As is the father, so is the son.*

(b) *He who, him who* is **chi** or **colúi che** (see 42, b).

Chi ha la sanità è **ríccó**. *He who has health is rich.*

Colúi che lavóra è conténto. *He who works is satisfied.*

Amiámo **chi** ci áma. *We love him who loves us.*

(c) *Whoever* is **chiúnque**; *whatever* as a pronoun is **tútto** **qué'l che** or **checchè**, as an adjective **quále che**, **qualúnque che**, **qualúnque**, **per quánto**. These words, excepting **tútto** **qué'l che**, all take the subjunctive. **Checchè** is now but little used.

Chiúnque siáte. *Whoever you may be.*

Checchè facciáte, fátelo bêne. *Whatever you do, do it well.*

Tútto **qué'l che** voléte. *Whatever you wish.*

Quálí che siano i vóstri motívi. *Whatever your motives may be.*

Qualúnque siano i suôi talénti. *Whatever his talents may be.*

In **qualúnque** státo **che** io mi trôvi. *In whatever condition I may find myself.*

Per **quânte** ricchézze égli ábbia. *Whatever riches he may have.*

45. The possessive pronouns and adjectives are:

| | SINGULAR | | PLURAL | |
|-----------------------------|-----------|-----------|----------|-----------|
| | MASC. | FEM. | MASC. | FEM. |
| <i>my, mine:</i> | il mío | la mía | i miéi | le míe |
| <i>thy, thine:</i> | il túo | la túa | i tuôi | le túe |
| <i>his, her, hers, its:</i> | il súo | la súa | i suôi | le súe |
| <i>our, ours:</i> | il nôstro | la nôstra | i nôstri | le nôstre |
| <i>your, yours:</i> | ii vóstro | la vôstra | i vôstri | le vôstre |
| <i>their, theirs:</i> | il lóro | la lóro | i lóro | le lóro |

Lóro is invariable; the others agree with the object possessed:

il mío násø, *my nose.* i vôstri ôcchi, *your eyes.*

la súa bócca, *his, her mouth.* le lóro lábbra, *their lips.*

When the possessive stands alone in the predicate, the article is omitted if the possessive is used adjectively. To

determine whether the possessive is used adjectively, consider the sentence as the answer to a question. If the sentence answers a question beginning with *whose*, there is no article; if it answers a question beginning with *which*, the article is used.

Quésto cappêllo è **mío**.

This hat is mine. *Whose hat?*
Mine.

Quésto cappêllo è **il mío**.

This hat is mine. *Which hat?*
This one.

(a) The article (unless it might be used in English) is omitted before the possessive:

1. When a numeral, an adjective of quantity, or a demonstrative or interrogative adjective precedes it:

Dúe cánî suôi.

Two dogs of his.

BUT I dúe cánî suôi.

The two dogs of his or his two dogs.

Mólti miêi amíci.

Many friends of mine.

BUT I mólti miêi amíci.

The many friends of mine or my many friends.

Quésto túo difêtto.

This fault of thine.

2. When the possessive forms part of a title:

Vôstra Maestà.

Your Majesty.

Súa Altézza.

His Highness.

3. When the possessive modifies a noun used in the vocative (in this case the possessive generally follows its noun): as **amíco mío**, *my friend!*

4. The article is generally omitted also when the possessive precedes a noun in the *singular* expressing relationship: as **nôstra mâdre**, *our mother*; compare **le míe figlie**, *my daughters*. But if the noun has a diminutive ending, or another adjective accompanies the noun, the article is not omitted:

Il túo fratellîno.

Thy little brother.

La vôstra gentilíssima sorêlla.

Your kind sister.

Sometimes it is omitted before a *predicate* noun that does not express relationship:

Quésto signóre è suo maêstro. *This gentleman is his teacher.*
 Ío lo credéva mío amíco. *I thought him my friend.*

5. The article is omitted also in certain standing phrases, such as:

| | |
|--------------------------------------|---|
| da párte mía, <i>for me.</i> | a môdo suo, <i>in his own way.</i> |
| per amór mío, <i>for my sake.</i> | è cólpa vôstra, <i>it's your fault.</i> |
| in cásá nôstra, <i>in our house.</i> | a cásá súa, <i>to his house.</i> |

(b) The possessive, when not necessary for clearness, is usually replaced by a definite article.

| | |
|--------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| Cóme sta la mâmma? | <i>How is your mother?</i> |
| Ha perdúto il giudízio. | <i>He has lost his senses.</i> |
| Báttono i piédi. | <i>They stamp their feet.</i> |

(c) When the name of the thing possessed is direct object of a verb, the Italians often use instead of the possessive a conjunctive personal pronoun (see 47) and a definite article.

| | |
|--|--|
| Si stráppa i capélli. | <i>He tears his hair</i> (<i>lit.</i> , he tears to himself the hairs). |
| Mi táglio il dító. | <i>I cut my finger</i> (<i>I cut to myself the finger</i>). |
| Il cáne gli agguantò la gámaba. | <i>The dog seized his leg</i> (<i>seized to him the leg</i>). |

If the thing possessed be a part of the body or clothing, this construction is frequent, even when the name of the thing is not object of a verb.

| | |
|--------------------------|---|
| Mi duôle il cápo. | <i>My head aches</i> (<i>to me aches the head</i>). |
|--------------------------|---|

(d) When the possessor is not the subject of the sentence, *his*, *her* are, for the sake of clearness, often rendered **di líui**, **di lêi**:

Égli non conósce **il di lêi** cuôre. *He does not know her heart.*

(e) *A . . . of mine, of thine, etc., is un mío, un túo, etc.:*

| | |
|--------------------|--------------------------|
| Úna nôstra cugína. | <i>A cousin of ours.</i> |
|--------------------|--------------------------|

PERSONAL PRONOUNS

46. Personal pronouns are divided into two classes, conjunctive and disjunctive: the conjunctive forms are those used as direct object of a verb, and as indirect object without a preposition; the disjunctive forms are those used as subject of a verb, and as object of a preposition.

EGLI ve lo dà per ME.
He to you it gives for me.

CONJUNCTIVE FORMS

47. Conjunctive pronouns are *always unaccented*, and cannot be separated from the verb, which they sometimes follow but oftener precede, as will be explained in **48**.

They are used only as direct object of a verb or as indirect object without a preposition. The forms are:

| | |
|--|---------------------------------|
| mi, me, to me. | ti, thee, to thee. |
| ci, us, to us. ¹ | vi, you, to you. |
| si (reflexive), himself, to himself; herself, to herself; itself, to itself. | |
| si (reflexive), themselves, to themselves. | |
| lo, him ¹ ; gli, to him. ² | la, her; le, to her. |
| li, them (masc.); lóro, to them. ² | le, them (fem.); lóro, to them. |

It must be rendered by a masculine or feminine form, according to the gender of the noun it represents. *It* representing not a word, but a whole clause, is *lo*.³

| | |
|----------------|------------------------|
| Mi conósee. | He knows me. |
| Ti do i líbri. | I give thee the books. |
| Ci vedéte. | You see us. |
| Vi díco tútto. | I tell you everything. |

¹ In old Italian and in poetry **ne** is often used for **ci**, and **il** for **lo**.

² In conversation **li** is often used for **gli**, and **gli** or **li** for **lóro**.

³ In certain idiomatic phrases **la** represents an indefinite object: as **pagárla cára**, to pay dearly for it.

| | |
|---|--|
| Si vête. | <i>He dresses himself.</i> |
| Si divêrtono. | <i>They amuse themselves.</i> |
| Ècco l' ôro: ve lo do. | <i>Here's the gold: I give it to you.</i> |
| Ècco la pálla: la védo. | <i>Here's the ball: I see it.</i> |
| Cóme potéva sapére se fo veníva o no? — Lo ha indo-vináto. | <i>How could he tell whether I was coming or not? He guessed it.</i> |

1. It will be seen that the third person (not reflexive) has different forms for the direct and the indirect object.

| | |
|------------------------------------|---|
| Lo trovái. | <i>I found him.</i> |
| Gli féci un regálo. | <i>I made him a present.</i> |
| La láscia. | <i>He leaves her.</i> |
| Le scríve. | <i>He writes to her.</i> |
| Li cercáte. | <i>You seek them (masc.).</i> |
| Le salutáte. | <i>You greet them (fem.).</i> |
| Mandiámó lóro mille salúti. | <i>We send them (masc. or fem.) a thousand greetings.</i> |

2. The reflexive pronouns of the first and second persons are **mi**, **ci**; **ti**, **vi**. All plural reflexive pronouns are used also as reciprocal pronouns. A verb is called *reflexive* when it has as *direct* or *indirect* object a *conjunctive* pronoun representing the same person as its subject.

| | |
|---------------------|---------------------------------|
| Mi defêndo. | <i>I defend myself.</i> |
| Vi laváte. | <i>You wash yourselves.</i> |
| Si fa onóre. | <i>She does herself credit.</i> |
| Si ôdiano. | <i>They hate each other.</i> |
| Ci amiámó. | <i>We love one another.</i> |

3. Another conjunctive pronoun is **ne**,¹ of *it*, of *them*; it corresponds also to *any*, *some* when these words mean *any*, *some of it*, *any, some of them*. It is often used pleonastically in Italian.

| | |
|--|---|
| Ne párla. | <i>He speaks of it.</i> |
| Ne ho. | <i>I have some.</i> |
| Non ne abbiámó. | <i>We haven't any.</i> |
| Ne voléte? | <i>Do you want any?</i> |
| Tu ne approfítti di quéstá libertà. | <i>You make good use of this liberty.</i> |

¹ Cf. French **en**.

(a) **Vi**, *you*, and **ci** and **ne**, *us*, are not distinguished by form nor position from the adverbs **vi**, **ci**, meaning *there*, *here*, *to it*, *to them*,¹ and the adverb **ne**, *thence* (see 84):²

| | |
|--------------------|------------------------------|
| Ci vádo. | <i>I go there.</i> |
| Vi è státo. | <i>He has been there.</i> |
| Ne vêngono. | <i>They come from there.</i> |

The adverb **ci** or **vi** is used to express *to it*, *to them*, in speaking of *things*.

| | |
|---|--|
| Ci pênsérò. | <i>I shall attend to it.</i> |
| Mi fa déi gêsti, ma non vi rispón-do. | <i>He makes signs to me, but I do not reply to them.</i> |

48. The conjunctive pronouns, except **lóro**, immediately precede the verb:

| | |
|-----------------|--------------------------------|
| Mi vedéte. | <i>You see me.</i> |
| Non lo capíseo. | <i>I don't understand him.</i> |

But when the verb is an infinitive,³ a positive imperative,⁴ a present participle, or a past participle used without an auxiliary, the pronoun follows the verb, and is written as one word with it:⁵

| | |
|---|--|
| per vedérlo, <i>to see him.</i> | di avérlo vedúto, <i>to have seen him.</i> |
| vedételi, <i>see them.</i> | vedêndoci, <i>seeing us.</i> |
| avêndoci vedúto, <i>having seen us.</i> | vedútoti, <i>having seen thee.</i> |

The addition of the pronoun does not change the place of the accent.

Lóro always follows the verb, but is never united to it.

| | |
|------------------------|---------------------------------|
| Égli dà lóro del víno. | <i>He gives them some wine.</i> |
| Parláte lóro. | <i>Speak to them.</i> |

¹ Cf. French **y**.

² Cf. French **en**.

³ Not the infinitive used — with a negative — as imperative (see 72): as **non lo fáre**, *do not do it* (second pers. sing.).

⁴ Not the negative imperative, nor the subjunctive used imperatively (see 77, a): as **non li guardáte**, *do not look at them*; **si régoli**, *let him moderate himself* (third pers. sing. pres. subj.).

⁵ Students should follow strictly all of these rules; but they will find that the first is, in certain cases, not always observed by good Italian writers. In literary style a pronoun often follows a verb that begins a sentence: as **védolo venire**, *I see him coming.*

(a) When an infinitive depends immediately (without an intervening preposition) on another verb, a conjunctive pronoun belonging to the infinitive may go with either verb:

Pôsso vedérti or **ti** pôsso *I can see thee.*
vedére.

(NEVER: pôsso ti vedére)

A reflexive pronoun oftenest goes with the main verb.

Si dêve corrêggere. *He must correct himself.*

If both verbs have objects, the main verb regularly takes all conjunctive pronouns:

Ve lo sênto díre.

I hear you say it.

Me lo fa capíre.

He makes me understand it.

If, however, the main verb is impersonal, it cannot take the object of the infinitive:

Bisórgna fárlo.

It is necessary to do it.

If the main verb is **fârre**, **lasciâre**, **sentîre**, **udíre**, or **vedére**, it must take the pronoun:

Lo fa chiamáre.

He has him called.

(b) If the main verb is **fârre**, and the dependent infinitive has a direct object, the object of **fârre**, if it has one, must be indirect:

Le fa avére la lêttera.

He lets her have the letter.

Fâteli vedére a quel signôre.

Let that gentleman see them.

Dovrêi fârglielo accettâre.

I ought to make him accept it.

This construction is generally used also with **lasciâre**, *to let*, and often with **sentîre** and **udíre**, *to hear*, and **vedére**, *to see*. Note that the main verb takes all conjunctive pronouns.

Gliélo védo dâre.

I see it given him.

(c) When a conjunctive pronoun is joined to an infinitive, that infinitive drops its final **e**; if it ends in **-irre**, it drops **-re**:

fârlo (**fârre**), *to do it.*

condúrvi (condúrre), *to conduct you.*

(d) The final vowel of **mi**, **ti**, **si** is often, and that of **lo**, **la** is nearly always elided before a verb beginning with a vowel:

| | |
|--------------|-----------------------|
| T' amo. | <i>I love thee.</i> |
| L' ho visto. | <i>I've seen him.</i> |

(e) All conjunctive pronouns except **gli** and **glie** (see 50) double their initial consonant when added to any form of a verb that ends in an accented vowel:

| | |
|--|------------------------------|
| Dámmi (<i>imper. da'</i> from <i>dáre</i>). | <i>Give me.</i> |
| Parlerôlle (<i>antique, for le par-</i> lerò). | <i>I shall speak to her.</i> |
| Dillo (<i>imper. di'</i> from <i>díre</i>). | <i>Say it.</i> |

(f) Pronouns are joined to the interjection **ècco**, see *here*, just as they are joined to the imperative of a verb:

| | |
|------------------|-----------------------------------|
| Èccomi. | <i>Here I am.</i> |
| Èccotelo pronto. | <i>Here it is ready for thee.</i> |

49. When two conjunctive pronouns come together, the indirect object precedes the direct:

| | |
|--------------------------|---|
| Mi vi presénta. | <i>He introduces you to me.</i> |
| Non vuôl presentárvimi. | <i>He will not introduce me to you.</i> |
| Gli si presentò un uômo. | <i>A man presented himself to him.</i> |

But see 55, end.

Lóro, however, always comes last:

| | |
|--------------------|-------------------------------|
| Presentátela lóro. | <i>Introduce her to them.</i> |
|--------------------|-------------------------------|

Ne follows all forms except **lóro**:

| | |
|--------------|--------------------------|
| Me ne dà. | <i>He gives me some.</i> |
| Dátene lóro. | <i>Give them some.</i> |

50. **Mi**, **ti**, **ci**, **vi**, **si** change their **i** to **e** before **lo**, **la**, **li**, **le**, **ne** (pronoun or adverb); and if the two words follow the verb, they are joined together:¹

| | |
|----------------|----------------------------|
| Me lo dice. | <i>He tells me it.</i> |
| Ve ne domândo. | <i>I ask you for some.</i> |
| Mandátecelo. | <i>Send it to us.</i> |

¹ In poetry **me lo**, **me ne**, etc., often become **mel**, **men**, etc.: as *tel dico*, *I tell thee so*; *sen tórná*, *he returns thence*. **Non lo** often = **nol**.

Gli and le (*to her*) become glie before lo, la, li, le, ne, and unite with them:

Gliéli mándo.
Vôglia dârglielo.

I send them to him, to her.
I wish to give it to him, to her.

DISJUNCTIVE FORMS

51. These forms are so called because they do not necessarily stand next to the verb.

Disjunctive pronouns have two cases, nominative and objective (or accusative). The objective case is used only after prepositions (for exceptions, see 51, a, b).

The disjunctive forms are these:

| | |
|--|----------------------------|
| ío, <i>I; me, me.</i> | tu, <i>thou; te, thee.</i> |
| nóí, <i>we; noi, us.</i> | vôí, <i>you; voi, you.</i> |
| { égli, líui, ésso, <i>he; lui, esso, him.</i> | |
| { élla, lêi, éssa, <i>she; lei, essa, her.</i> | |
| { éssi, lóro, <i>they (masc.); loro, essi, them (masc.).</i> | |
| { ésse, lóro, <i>they (fem.); loro, esse, them (fem.).</i> | |

It must be rendered by a masculine or feminine form, according to the gender of the noun it represents. *It* as subject of an impersonal verb is regularly not expressed (see, however, 51, h).

La cásá è grandíssima, e in-
tórno ad éssa c' è un giar-
díno.

Non è véro.
Piôve.

*The house is very large, and around
it there is a garden.*

*It isn't true.
It rains.*

1. The various pronouns of the third person are used as follows:

In speaking of *things* the different forms of éssو are generally employed.

In speaking of *persons* égli (or éssо), élla (or éssa), pl. éssi, ésse, are used for the nominative in written Italian,¹ but in the spoken

¹ Italian formerly possessed also masc. églino, fem. élleno, *they*, for persons; likewise pl. égli (or éi) and élle.

language they are replaced by **lúi**, **lêi**, **lóro**. For the objective, **lúi**, **lêi**, **lóro** (sometimes **éssô**, **éssâ**, **éssi**, **ésse**) are used both in conversation and in writing.

For *he who*, etc., see 42, b.

| | |
|---|-------------------------------------|
| Quéste côse sóno vére anch' ésse . | <i>These things are true, too.</i> |
| Ella párla con lóro . | <i>She speaks with them.</i> |
| Lêi è gióvane ma lúi è vêchcho. | <i>She is young, but he is old.</i> |
| Vénnero da nói anch' éssi . | <i>They came to us, too.</i> |

2. As the Italian verb denotes by its endings the person and number of its subject, the personal pronouns of the nominative case are generally omitted. When expressed (for clearness, emphasis, or euphony), they may precede or follow the verb; in dependent clauses they nearly always follow. The subject of an interrogative verb usually comes after it, as in English.

| | |
|---|---------------------------------|
| Parliámo di lúi . | <i>We speak of him.</i> |
| Non vâdo. | <i>I don't go.</i> |
| S' ío fóssi ríccô cóme è égli . | <i>If I were rich as he is.</i> |
| Vêngono éssi ? | <i>Are they coming?</i> |

3. The disjunctive reflexive pronoun of the third person is **sè**, which is masculine and feminine, singular and plural.

| | |
|--------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| Lo fécerô da sè . | <i>They did it by themselves.</i> |
|--------------------------|-----------------------------------|

In the other persons **me**, **nói**, **te**, **vôi** are used.

(a) Use the objective case and not, as in English, the nominative:
 (1) When a pronoun of the third person may be regarded as the subject of an unexpressed verb:

| | |
|---|--|
| Beáto lúi ! | <i>Happy he!</i> |
| Tânto i genitôri che lúi sóno rícchi. | <i>His parents as well as he are rich.</i> |

(2) When the pronoun stands in the predicate after the verb **éssere**:

| | |
|-----------------------------------|----------------------------|
| Credêndo ch' fo fóssi te . | <i>Thinking I was you.</i> |
|-----------------------------------|----------------------------|

But note carefully that *it is I*, etc., are **sóno** **ío**, **sêi** **tu**, **è** **lúi**, **è** **lêi**, **siámo** **nói**, **siête** **vôi**, **sóno** **lóro**.

(b) (1) When the pronoun is at all emphatic, the *disjunctive* form *must* be used. In this case the conjunctive form is often inserted also.

Párlo a **vóí** signóre.
Mi piáce ánc̄e a **me**.

I speak to you, sir.
It pleases me too.

BUT

Vi párlo.
Mi piáce.

I speak to you.
It pleases me.

(2) The disjunctive form must therefore *always* be used when the verb has two direct or two indirect objects.

Védo lúi e lēi.
Lo do a mío pádre e a te.

I see him and her.
I give it to my father and to thee.

(c) In speaking of a company, a class, or a people **nóí áltri**, **vóí áltri** (which are also written as one word) are used for **nóí**, **vóí**.

Nóí áltri italiáni.
Vóí áltri pittóri.

We Italians.
You painters.

(d) *With me, with thee, with himself, herself, themselves* are either **con me**, etc., or **méco, téco, séco**.

(e) *Myself, thyself, etc.*, used for emphasis with a pronoun or noun, are rendered by the adjective **stésso**.

Nóí stéssi la vedémmo.

We saw her ourselves.

(f) *One another, each other* is **l' un l' áltro**.

Ci amiámo l' un l' áltro.

We love one another.

(g) In Florence **élla** is often shortened into **la** (plural **le**), which is used of both persons and things. In poetry **égli** becomes **éi**.

La non viéne.
Páre che la si pôssa tenér in
máno.
Éi táce.

She doesn't come.
It looks as if it might be held in the hand.
He is silent.

(h) In impersonal phrases like *it is* the subject, *it*, is occasionally expressed in Italian; it is then translated **égli**, which in the spoken language is shortened into **gli**.

Gli è che.

It is because.

52. 1. The usual form of address in Italy is **Élla**¹ (or *élla*), objective **Lêi** (or *lêi*); in conversation **Élla** is replaced by **Lêi** (or *lêi*). This word really means *it*, and takes the verb in the third person; but an adjective or past participle modifying it agrees in gender with the person it represents.

The plural of **Élla** is **Lóro** (or *lóro*), which takes the verb in the third person plural.

The use of the capital initial in all these words is optional. It marks respect, and is sometimes useful to distinguish *you* from *she*.

| | |
|--|---|
| Lêi or Élla è tedesco, signóre. | <i>You are German, sir.</i> |
| Signorína Néri, Lêi or Élla fu lasciáta sóla. | <i>Miss Neri, you were left alone.</i> |
| Sóno liéto che La stía bêne (see 51, g.) | <i>I'm glad you are well.</i> |
| E Lóro , dóve vánno? | <i>And you, where are you going?</i> |
| Lóro êrano già partíti. | <i>You were already gone.</i> |
| Signoríne, Lóro sóno móltó studióse. | <i>Young ladies, you are very studious.</i> |

Like other personal pronouns, **Élla** and **Lóro** are very often omitted in the nominative.

| | |
|--|-----------------------------|
| Lêi è trôppo gentile or è trôppo gentile.. | <i>You are too kind.</i> |
| Cóme stánno? | <i>How do you (pl.) do?</i> |

The conjunctive forms of **Élla** are **La**, **Le** (or *la*, *le*), those of **Lóro** are **Li**, **Le**, **Lóro** (or *li*, *le*, *lóro*); they occupy the same positions and undergo the same modifications as the corresponding pronouns of the third person (see **48, 49, 50**).

Note that regularly in the singular the same pronoun is used, whether one is addressing a man or a woman; although occasionally **lo**, **gli** are substituted for **la**, **le** in speaking to a

¹ Standing for **Vôstra Signoria**, *your lordship*, or *ladyship*, or some other title of the feminine gender.

male. In the *plural*, however, if the pronoun be a direct object, the sexes are regularly distinguished.

The reflexive pronoun of **Élla** and **Lóro** is **si**.

| | |
|---------------------------|--|
| Le prométto di visitárla. | <i>I promise (you) to visit you.</i> |
| Gliélo do. | <i>I give it to you.</i> |
| La prêgo d' accomodársi. | <i>I beg you to seat yourself.</i> |
| Vídi Léi e il bábbo. | <i>I saw you and your father (see 51, b, 2).</i> |
| Dico lóro. | <i>I tell you (pl.).</i> |
| Le cercáva. | <i>I was looking for you (fem. pl.).</i> |
| Non pôsso vedérli. | <i>I can't see you (masc. pl.).</i> |
| Si divêrtono, signoríni? | <i>Are you enjoying yourselves, young gentlemen?</i> |

The possessive of **Élla** is **Súo** (or **súo**); that of **Lóro** is **Lóro** (or **lóro**). See 45.

| | |
|-------------------------|-----------------------------|
| La Súa gradítâ lêttera. | <i>Your welcome letter.</i> |
|-------------------------|-----------------------------|

2. **Vóí** is the form of address oftenest found in books; it is used sometimes in conversation also, but only toward inferiors or toward equals with whom one is on familiar terms.¹ It is employed for both plural and singular (like English *you*), although its verb is always plural; an adjective or participle modifying it agrees in gender and number with the person or persons it represents.

| | |
|-----------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| Vóí qui, Piêtro? | <i>You here, Peter?</i> |
| Vóí siête álti tútti e dûe. | <i>You are tall, both of you.</i> |

3. In speaking to an intimate friend, a near relative, a child, or an animal, the only form of address is **tu**. **Tu** is used also, like English *thou*, in poetry and poetic prose. The plural of **tu** is **vóí**.

| | |
|---------------------------------|--|
| Ti chiámo Enríco. | <i>I call you Henry.</i> |
| Dóve séi tu? | <i>Where art thou?</i> |
| Vôglia vedérvi, figliuôli miêi. | <i>My children, I wish to see you.</i> |

¹ Though advocated by some of the best writers and speakers of Italian, the use of **vóí** instead of **Léi** and **Lóro** has not become general. In Southern Italy, however, **vóí** is the form popularly used.

AUXILIARY VERBS

53. The irregular verbs **essere**, *to be*, and **avére**, *to have*, are the ones most used as auxiliaries in Italian. They are conjugated as follows:

(a) **INFINITIVES:** **essere**, *to be*; **essere státo**, *to have been*.

PARTICIPLES: **essêndo**, *being*; **essêndo státo**, *having been*; **státo**, *been*.

INDICATIVE

| PRESENT | PAST DESCRIPTIVE | PAST ABSOLUTE | FUTURE |
|--------------------------|--------------------------|-------------------------|--------------------------------|
| <i>I am, etc.</i> | <i>I was, etc.</i> | <i>I was, etc.</i> | <i>I shall be, etc.</i> |
| sôno | êra | fûi | sarò |
| séi | êri | fôsti | sarái |
| è | êra | fu | sarà |
| siâmo | eravâmo | fûmmo | sarémo |
| siâte | eravâte | fôste | saréte |
| sôno | êrano | fûrono | sarârno |
| PRESENT | PAST PERFECT | SECOND PAST | FUTURE |
| PERFECT | | PERFECT | PERFECT |
| <i>I have been, etc.</i> | <i>I had been, etc.</i> | <i>I had been, etc.</i> | <i>I shall have been, etc.</i> |
| sôno státo (stâta) | êra státo (stâta) | fûi státo (stâta) | sarò státo (stâta) |
| etc. | etc. | etc. | etc. |
| siâmo stâti (stâte) | eravâmo stâti (stâte) | fûmmo stâti (stâte) | sarémo stâti (stâte) |
| etc. | etc. | etc. | etc. |

| IMPERATIVE | SUBJUNCTIVE | PAST FUTURE |
|-----------------|-------------------|---------------------|
| <i>Be, etc.</i> | PRESENT | PAST |
| | <i>I be, etc.</i> | <i>I were, etc.</i> |
| síi or sía | sía | fôssi |
| | sía | fôssi |
| | sía | fôsse |
| siâmo | siâmo | fôssimo |
| siâte | siâte | fôste |
| | síano or síeno | fôssero |

SUBJUNCTIVE

| PRESENT | PAST | PAST FUTURE |
|--------------------------|-------------------------|---------------------------------|
| PERFECT | PERFECT | PERFECT |
| <i>I have been, etc.</i> | <i>I had been, etc.</i> | <i>I should have been, etc.</i> |
| síá státo (státa) | fóssi státo (státa) | saréi státo (státa) |
| etc. | etc. | etc. |

(b) INFINITIVES: *avére*, *to have*; *avére avúto*, *to have had*.PARTICIPLES: *avêndo*, *having*; *avêndo avúto*, *having had*; *avúto*, *had*.

INDICATIVE

| PRESENT | PAST DESCRIPTIVE | PAST ABSOLUTE | FUTURE |
|-------------------------|------------------------|------------------------|-------------------------------|
| PERFECT | PAST | SECOND PAST | FUTURE |
| PERFECT | PERFECT | PERFECT | PERFECT |
| <i>I have, etc.</i> | <i>I had, etc.</i> | <i>I had, etc.</i> | <i>I shall have, etc.</i> |
| ho | avéva | ébbi | avrò |
| hái | avévi | avéstí | avrái |
| ha | avéva | ébbe | avrà |
| abbiámo | avevámo | avémmo | avrémo |
| avéte | aveváte | avéste | avréte |
| hánno | aveváno | ébbero | avránno |
| PRESENT | PAST | SECOND PAST | FUTURE |
| PERFECT | PERFECT | PERFECT | PERFECT |
| <i>I have had, etc.</i> | <i>I had had, etc.</i> | <i>I had had, etc.</i> | <i>I shall have had, etc.</i> |
| ho avúto etc. | avéva avúto etc. | ébbi avúto etc. | avrò avúto etc. |

IMPERATIVE

SUBJUNCTIVE

| PRESENT | PAST | PAST FUTURE |
|-------------------------|------------------------|--------------------------------|
| PERFECT | PERFECT | PERFECT |
| <i>Have, etc.</i> | <i>I have, etc.</i> | <i>I should have, etc.</i> |
| ábbi | ábbia | avrèi |
| abbiámo | ábbi or ábbia | avréstí |
| abbiáte | ábbia | avrèbbe |
| | abbiámo | avrémmo |
| | abbiáte | avrésté |
| | ábbiano | avrèbbero |
| PRESENT | PAST | PAST FUTURE |
| PERFECT | PERFECT | PERFECT |
| <i>I have had, etc.</i> | <i>I had had, etc.</i> | <i>I should have had, etc.</i> |
| ábbia avúto etc. | avéssi avúto etc. | avrèi avúto etc. |

54. 1. The auxiliary of the passive is **èssere**, *to be*.

L'esercito **fu** sconfitto. *The army was defeated.*

2. The future (*shall*, *will*) and the past future or conditional (*should*, *would*) are formed in Italian without any auxiliary.

Io andrò ed egli **verrà**. *I shall go, and he will come.*
Vorréi vederlo. *I should like to see him.*

3. The auxiliary of the perfect, past perfect, second past perfect, and future perfect tenses is **avére**, *to have*, if the verb be active and transitive.

If the verb be passive, reflexive, or reciprocal, the auxiliary is always **èssere**. For the definition of a reflexive verb, see **47, 2**, on p. 36.

If the verb be intransitive, the auxiliary is generally **èssere**, but sometimes **avére**.¹

| | |
|------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| Ho parlato. | <i>I have spoken.</i> |
| Avévanó fatto quéste côse. | <i>They had done these things.</i> |
| Mi sóno fatto mále. | <i>I have hurt myself.</i> |
| Le dônné si éranó sbagliáte. | <i>The women had made a mistake.</i> |
| Sarò venúto. | <i>I shall have come.</i> |
| È nevicáto. | <i>It has snowed.</i> |
| Avéva viaggiáto. | <i>He had traveled.</i> |

(a) A past participle used with the auxiliary **èssere** must agree with its *subject* in gender and number.

La ragázza è tornáta. *The girl has returned.*
Le dônné si sóno disputáte. *The women have disputed.*

But when the verb has a reflexive pronoun as *indirect object*, and some other word as *direct object*, the past participle may agree with the subject, or with the direct object, or remain invariable.

| | |
|---|---|
| La sorêlla si è fátt'a mále. | <i>Our sister has hurt herself.</i> |
| Ci siámo fátti onóre. | <i>We have done ourselves credit.</i> |
| Ci siámo dát'a (or dát'o) parôla d'onóre. | <i>We have pledged our word of honor.</i> |

¹ The use of **avére** with intransitive verbs must be learned by practice.

(b) A past participle used with **avére** may or may not agree with its *direct object*, according to the choice of the writer. It usually does not agree when the object follows; and it nearly always does agree when the object is a personal pronoun preceding the verb.

La bírra che avéva bevúto (or
bevúta). *The beer he had drunk.*

Ho vedúto mólte côse. *I have seen many things.*
Li ho trováti. *I have found them.*

(c) *To be*, expressing a state or condition, is often rendered by **stáre** (92, 4), instead of **éssere**. **Stáre per** or **éssere per** (followed by the infinitive) means *to be on the point of*.

| | |
|-------------------|------------------------------|
| Sto bêne. | <i>I'm well.</i> |
| Cóme sta? | <i>How are you?</i> |
| Stáva per uscire. | <i>I was just going out.</i> |

(d) English *am* (or *was*) + the present participle, when expressing duration, is rendered either by the simple present (or past descriptive) or by the same tense of **stáre**¹ + the present participle; when denoting futurity, it is translated by the future (or past future), sometimes by the present (or past descriptive).

| | |
|--------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| Cammináva. | <i>He was walking.</i> |
| Státe lavorando. | <i>You are working.</i> |
| Leggévano or stávano leggêndo. | <i>They were reading.</i> |
| Médito or sto meditândo. | <i>I am meditating.</i> |
| Díce che verrà (or viêne). | <i>He says he is coming.</i> |
| Dísse che verrêbbe. | <i>He said he was coming.</i> |

(e) A verb with the auxiliary *used to* (or *would=used to*) is translated either by the simple past descriptive, or by the infinitive with **solére**, *to be accustomed* (92, 14).

Vi andáva (or soléva andáre) *He used to go (or would go) there every evening.*

(f) **Veníre**, *to come* (92, 166), and **rimanére**, *to remain* (92, 16), are sometimes used as auxiliaries in the simple tenses of the passive,

¹ **Andáre** (92, 1) and **veníre** (92, 166) are sometimes used instead of **stáre**.

instead of **éssere**. **Andáre**, *to go* (92, 1), is similarly used, but always implying duty or obligation.

I lâdri vénnero arrestáti.

The thieves were arrested.

Rimáse sorprésa.

She was surprised.

Il fucile non va toccáto.

The gun mustn't be touched.

(g) The English auxiliary *do* is not expressed in Italian.

Non viène.

He does not come.

(h) *To have a thing done* is far **fâré** **úna côsa** (92, 2).

Il re lo féce ammazzáre.

The king had him killed.

55. The third person of the passive is very often replaced by the reflexive construction with **si**:

Si racconto.

It is related.

Quêsto libro **si** lègge.

This book is read.

La spâda che mi **si** diâde.

The sword that was given me.

Quêlle côse **si** facévano.

Those things were done.

Many writers always make the verb agree with its subject in number; but in popular speech the verb is nearly always in the singular when its subject follows (as if **si** were the subject of the verb, and the original subject were the object):

Si védono (or **véde**) moltís-sime côse.

Many things are seen.

Non **si** può (or **pôssono**) lègere quêsti libri.

These books can't be read.

Si belonging to a dependent infinitive regularly goes with the main verb (see 48, a).

The construction with **si** is generally used also to render the English indefinite *they* followed by a verb: as **si** díce, *they say*. In this sense it is employed with neuter as well as with transitive verbs: as **si** va spésso, *people often go*. See also 63, a. In this construction an object pronoun may precede **si**: as **lo si fa**, *it is done*.

56. Following are synopses of the compound tenses of transitive, neuter, reflexive, and passive verbs. In the paradigms given henceforth these forms will be omitted.

(a) Following is a synopsis of the compound tenses of **trováre**, *to find*, and **veníre**, *to come*:

| | |
|--|--|
| avére trováto, <i>to have found.</i> | êssere venúto, <i>to have come.</i> |
| avêndo trováto, <i>having found.</i> | essêndo venúto, <i>having come.</i> |
| ho trováto, <i>I have found.</i> | sóno venúto, <i>I have come.</i> |
| avéva trováto, <i>I had found.</i> | êra venúto, <i>I had come.</i> |
| êbbi trováto, <i>I had found.</i> | fúi venúto, <i>I had come.</i> |
| avrò trováto, <i>I shall have found.</i> | sarò venúto, <i>I shall have come.</i> |
| avrêi trováto, <i>I should have found.</i> | sarêi venúto, <i>I should have come.</i> |
| âbbia trováto, <i>I have found.</i> | sía venúto, <i>I have come.</i> |
| avéssi trováto, <i>I had found.</i> | fóssi venúto, <i>I had come.</i> |

(b) Following is a synopsis of the compound tenses of **alzársi**, (*to raise one's self*), *to get up*, and **andársene**,¹ *to go away*.

| | | |
|--------------------------|------------------|--------------------|
| INFINITIVE: PAST | êssersi alzáto | êssersene andáto |
| PARTICIPLE: PAST | essêndosi alzáto | essêndosene andáto |
| INDICATIVE: PRES. PERF. | mi sóno alzáto | me ne sóno andáto |
| PAST PERFECT | mi êra alzáto | me ne êra andáto |
| SECOND PAST PERFECT | mi fúi alzáto | me ne fúi andáto |
| FUTURE PERFECT | mi sarò alzáto | me ne sarò andáto |
| PAST FUTURE: PERFECT | mi sarêi alzáto | me ne sarêi andáto |
| SUBJUNCTIVE: PRES. PERF. | mi sía alzáto | me ne sía andáto |
| PAST PERFECT | mi fóssi alzáto | me ne fóssi andáto |

(c) Following is a synopsis of the entire passive of **amáre**, *to love*:

| | |
|---------------------|--|
| INFINITIVE: PRESENT | êssere amáto, <i>to be loved.</i> |
| PAST | êssere státo amáto, <i>to have been loved.</i> |
| PARTICIPLE: PRESENT | essêndo amáto, <i>being loved.</i> |
| PAST | essêndo státo amáto, <i>having been loved.</i> |
| INDICATIVE: PRESENT | sóno amáto, <i>I am loved.</i> |
| PRESENT PERFECT | sóno státo amáto, <i>I have been loved.</i> |
| PAST DESCRIPTIVE | êra amáto, <i>I was loved.</i> |
| PAST PERFECT | êra státo amáto, <i>I had been loved.</i> |
| PAST ABSOLUTE | fúi amáto, <i>I was loved.</i> |
| SECOND PAST PERFECT | fúi státo amáto, <i>I had been loved.</i> |

¹ *Andársene* is composed of the verb **andáre**, *to go*, the reflexive **si**, and the adverb **ne**, *thence* (see 47, a).

| | |
|----------------------|---|
| FUTURE | sarò amáto, <i>I shall be loved.</i> |
| FUTURE PERFECT | sarò státo amáto, <i>I shall have been loved.</i> |
| PAST FUTURE | saréi amáto, <i>I should be loved.</i> |
| PERFECT | saréi státo amáto, <i>I should have been loved.</i> |
| IMPERATIVE | síi amáto, <i>be loved.</i> |
| SUBJUNCTIVE: PRESENT | sía amáto, <i>I be loved.</i> |
| PRESENT PERFECT | sía státo amáto, <i>I have been loved.</i> |
| PAST | fóssi amáto, <i>I were loved.</i> |
| PAST PERFECT | fóssi státo amáto, <i>I had been loved.</i> |

57. *May, might, can, could* are generally rendered by the proper tense of **potére**¹; *must, ought, shall = must, should = ought*, by **dovére**¹; *will and would* expressing volition, by **volére**.¹

| | |
|---------------------|--|
| Può êssere véro. | <i>It may be true.</i> |
| Non potéva parláre. | <i>He couldn't speak.</i> |
| Dêve pagárlo. | <i>He must pay him, he shall pay him.</i> |
| Dovrèbbe fárlo. | <i>He ought to do it, he should do it.</i> |
| Vôglia sapére. | <i>I will know.</i> |
| Non vorrêi andáre. | <i>I wouldn't go.</i> |

Note that *ought* must be expressed by the *past future* (or *conditional*) of **dovére**.

| | |
|---------------------|---------------------------------|
| Dovrémmo parláre. | <i>We ought to speak.</i> |
| Avrêi dovúto fárlo. | <i>I ought to have done it.</i> |

No preposition intervenes between these verbs and the dependent infinitive.

| | |
|-----------------------|--------------------------------------|
| Hánno potúto dormíre. | <i>They have been able to sleep.</i> |
| Potrémo partíre. | <i>We shall be able to start.</i> |
| Dovémmo veníre. | <i>We had to come.</i> |
| Dovréte trovárla. | <i>You will have to find her.</i> |
| Vorrà tornáre. | <i>He will want to return.</i> |
| Vorrêi sapére. | <i>I should like to know.</i> |

These verbs are not defective, like the English modal auxiliaries; hence in Italian the tense is expressed by the

¹ See 92, 21, 8, 19. The auxiliary of these verbs is regularly **avére**; but some writers use with them the auxiliary that belongs to the dependent infinitive: as **hánno potúto veníre** or **sóno potúti veníre**, *they have been able to come*.

auxiliary itself, and not by the dependent infinitive. To find the proper form of **potére**, **dovére**, or **volére**, replace *may*, etc., by the correct tense of *to be able*; *must*, etc., by *to be obliged*; *will*, etc., by *to want* or *to like*: as *I could have said it=I should have* (**avrêi**) *been able* (**potúto**) *to say it* (**dírlo**)=**avrêi potúto dírlo**.

| | |
|--------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| Avrêbbe dovúto tacére. | <i>He ought to have kept still.</i> |
| Avrémmo volúto restáre. | <i>We would have stayed.</i> |

(a) *Must* is also expressed by the impersonal verb **bisognáre**, *to be necessary*, followed by the infinitive or by **che**, *that*, with the subjunctive. *To have to* is **avére da**.

| | |
|------------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| Bisórgna fárlo. | <i>It must be done.</i> |
| Bisórgna che andiámo. | <i>We must go.</i> |
| Ho da scrívere úna lêttera. | <i>I have to write a letter.</i> |

(b) *To be able* meaning *to know how* is **sapére** (see 92, 6). *Not to be able to help doing a thing* is **non potér a méno di non** (with infinitive) or **non potér fáre a méno di** (with infinitive).

| | |
|---------------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| Non sêppe fárlo. | <i>He couldn't do it.</i> |
| Sa lèggere e scrívere. | <i>He can read and write.</i> |
| Non potè a méno di non rídere. | <i>He couldn't help laughing.</i> |

REGULAR AND IRREGULAR VERBS

58. Italian verbs are divided into four conjugations, according as the infinitive ending is **-áre**, accented **-ére**, unaccented **-ere** (or **-rre**), or **-íre**. Regular verbs of the second and third conjugations are, however, inflected just alike.

(a) The final **e** of the infinitive may be dropped before any word except one beginning with **s** impure.¹

¹ Cf. 10, b; 14, b. Italians find it hard to pronounce three consecutive consonants of which the middle one is **s**.

THE REGULAR VERB

59. **Parlare**, *to speak*, will serve as a model for the first conjugation. All compound tenses are omitted (see 56):

INFINITIVE AND PARTICIPLES

| | | |
|---------|----------|---------|
| parlare | parlando | parlato |
|---------|----------|---------|

INDICATIVE

| PRESENT | PAST DESCRIPTIVE | PAST ABSOLUTE | FUTURE |
|----------|------------------|---------------|------------|
| párlo | parlava | parlai | parlerò |
| párlí | parlávi | parlásti | parlerái |
| párla | parlava | parlò | parlerà |
| parlíamo | parlavámo | parlámmo | parlerémo |
| parláte | parlaváte | parláste | parleréte |
| párlano | parlaváno | parlárano | parleránno |

| IMPERATIVE | SUBJUNCTIVE | PAST FUTURE |
|------------|-------------|-------------|
| | PRESENT | PAST |
| | párlí | parlássi |
| párla | párli | parlássi |
| | párli | parlásse |
| parlíamo | parlíamo | parlássimo |
| parláte | parliáte | parláste |
| | párlino | parlássero |
| | | |

(a) Verbs whose infinitives end in *-care* or *-gare* insert **h** after the **c** or **g** in all forms where those letters precede **e** or **i**:

Pághi (*pagáre*).

Let him pay.

Cercherò (*cercáre*).

I shall search.

Verbs in *-ciare* and *-giare* drop the **i** before **e** or **i**:

Mangi (*mangiáre*).

Thou eatest.

Cominceerà¹ (*cominciáre*).

He will begin.

But all other verbs in *-iare* drop the **i** only before another **i**:

Piechi (*picchiáre*).

Let him strike.

Pigli (*pigliáre*).

Thou takest.

BUT

Piechierà, piglieréi.

He will strike, I should take.

¹ Some writers retain the **i** before **e**: as *comincierà*.

(b) The verbs **giocáre**, **rotáre**, **sonáre** generally change o of the stem into **uo** in all forms where that vowel is accented:

Suôni.
Giuôcano.

Let him play.
They play.

Rinnováre and tonáre may make the same change. The **u** is sometimes used throughout.

60. Verbs of the second and third conjugations¹ are inflected like **crédere**, *to believe*:

INFINITIVE AND PARTICIPLES

| | | |
|----------------|-----------------|----------------|
| crédere | credêndo | credúto |
|----------------|-----------------|----------------|

INDICATIVE

| PRESENT | PAST DESCRIPTIVE | PAST ABSOLUTE | FUTURE |
|----------|------------------|------------------------|------------|
| crédo | credéva | credéi (credétti) | crederò |
| crédi | credévi | credésti | crederái |
| créde | credéva | credè (credètte) | crederà |
| crediâmo | credevâmo | credémmo | crederémo |
| credéte | credevâte | credéste | crederéte |
| crédono | credévano | credérono (credéttoro) | crederánno |

| IMPERATIVE | SUBJUNCTIVE | PAST FUTURE |
|------------|-------------|-------------|
|------------|-------------|-------------|

| | PRESENT | PAST | PAST FUTURE |
|----------|----------|------------|--------------|
| | créda | credéssi | crederèi |
| crédi | créda | credéssi | crederéstti |
| | créda | credésse | crederèbbe |
| crediâmo | crediâmo | credéssimo | crederémmo |
| credéte | crediáte | credéste | crederéstte |
| | crédano | credéssero | crederébbero |

The following verbs and their compounds do not have in the past absolute the forms in parentheses:

| | | |
|------------|----------|----------|
| bâtttere | méscere | strídere |
| compêtere | miêtere | têssere |
| convêrgere | pásdere | tóndere |
| divêrgere | prûdere | |
| lúcere | ripêtere | |

¹ Many grammars and dictionaries class these two together as the "second conjugation."

Verbs in **-cere** and **-gere** insert after the **c** or **g** an **i** before the **u** of the past participle, but not before the **o** or **a** of the singular or third person plural of the present indicative or subjunctive:

méscere; méscō, mésci, mésce, mesciámō, mescéte, méscono; mésca, etc., mescano; mesciúto.

61. Most verbs of the fourth conjugation¹ are inflected like **finíre**, *to finish*:

INFINITIVE AND PARTICIPLES

| | | |
|---------------|----------------|---------------|
| finíre | finêndo | finíto |
|---------------|----------------|---------------|

INDICATIVE

| PRESENT | PAST DESCRIPTIVE | PAST ABSOLUTE | FUTURE |
|-----------|------------------|---------------|-----------|
| finísco | finíva | finíi | finirò |
| finísci | finívi | finísti | finirái |
| finísce | finíva | finì | finirà |
| finiámō | finivámō | finímmo | finirémo |
| finíte | finiváte | finíste | finiréte |
| finíscono | finívano | finírono | finiránno |

| IMPERATIVE | SUBJUNCTIVE | PAST | FUTURE |
|------------|-------------|-----------|-------------|
| | PRESENT | PAST | |
| finísci | finísca | finíssi | finiréi |
| | finísca | finíssi | finirésti |
| | finísca | finísse | finirébbe |
| finiámō | finiámō | finíssimo | finirémmo |
| finíte | finiáte | finíste | finiréste |
| | finíscono | finíssero | finirébbero |

Though inflected like **finíre** in all other parts, **dormíre**, **fuggíre**,² **pentíre**, **sentíre**, **servíre**, **vestíre** are always, **aborríre**, **bollíre**, and verbs in **-vertíre** are generally, and **assorbíre**, **inghiottíre**, **mentíre**, **nutríre**, **tossíre** are often, in the present indicative, imperative, and subjunctive, conjugated

¹ Many grammars and dictionaries call this the "third conjugation."

² **Fuggíre** inserts no extra **i** (see last sentence of 60).

after the model below. **Partíre** and **sortíre** are, when transitive, inflected like **finíre**, when intransitive, like **sentíre**.¹

| INDICATIVE | IMPERATIVE | SUBJUNCTIVE |
|------------|------------|-------------|
| sênto | | sênta |
| sênti | sênti | sênta |
| sênte | | sênta |
| sentiâmo | sentiâmo | sentiâmo |
| sentite | sentite | sentiâte |
| sêntono | | sêntano |

62. The present participle of all verbs is invariable.

Stavámo parlândo.

We were speaking.

63. In all conjugations a form of the first person singular of the past descriptive ending in -o instead of -a is nearly always used in conversation, and occurs often in the works of modern authors:

Leggévo.

I was reading.

(a) In popular speech the first person plural of all tenses is generally replaced by the third person singular preceded by **si**:

Nói áltro si crede.

We believe.

Nói si éra venúti.

We had come.

Ci si decíse.

We decided (ourselves).

(b) Final o of the third person plural is frequently omitted:

Párlan di lúi.

They speak of him.

Forms in -ârno sometimes drop -no:

Dirán tútto.

They will tell everything.

(c) The past descriptive endings -avâmo, -avâte, -evâmo, -evâte, -ivâmo, -ivâte are often pronounced -âvamo, -âvate, etc.

(d) Occasionally, especially in poetry, -at- is omitted from the ending of the past participle of the first conjugation: **destâto** = **déstô**.

¹ Compounds are conjugated like their simple verbs.

THE IRREGULAR VERB

64. Certain parts of Italian irregular verbs are always regular: the example given below will show which they are. **Èssere** (see 53, a) is an exception to all rules.

65. Many irregular verbs that belong or once belonged to the third conjugation have the infinitive contracted (**fâre** for **fâcer**e, **díre** for **dícere**, **condúrre** for **condúcere**): in this case the future and past future are formed from this contracted infinitive (**farò**, **dirêi**, **condurrêbbe**), while the present participle, the past descriptive and past subjunctive, and certain persons of the present and past absolute are formed from the uncontracted stem (**facêndo**, **dicéva**, **conduciámo**).

66. **Pôrre** (for **pônere**), *to put*, a verb of the third conjugation, will serve to show which are the regular and which the irregular parts of irregular verbs: the forms printed in boldface are regular in all verbs except **dâre**, **díre**, **êssere**, **fâre**, **stâre**; those in Roman type may be irregular.

INFINITIVE AND PARTICIPLES

pôrre **ponêndo** **pôsto**

INDICATIVE

| PRESENT | PAST DESCRIPTIVE | PAST ABSOLUTE | FUTURE |
|----------------------------|------------------|------------------------------------|----------|
| póngó | ponéva | pósi | porrò |
| póni | ponévi | ponést<i>i</i> ² | porrái |
| póne | ponéva | póse | porrà |
| poniámo | ponevámo | ponémmo ² | porrémo |
| ponéte ¹ | poneváte | ponéste ² | porréte |
| póngono | ponévan o | pósero | porránnو |

¹ See 66, 4.

² See 66, 3.

IMPERATIVE

SUBJUNCTIVE

PAST FUTURE

| | PRESENT | PAST | |
|---------|---------|----------------------|------------|
| póni | pónga | ponéssi ¹ | porrêi |
| poníamo | pónga | ponéssi | porrésti |
| ponéte | pónga | ponésse | porrèbbe |
| | poníamo | ponéssimo | porrémmo |
| | poniáte | ponéste | porréste |
| | póngano | ponéssero | porrèbbero |

It will be seen that the present participle, the past descriptive and past subjunctive, and certain persons of the present and past absolute are always regular.

1. **Dáre** and **stáre** have in the future and past future **darò**, **darêi**; **starò**, **starêi**. Otherwise the only irregularity in the future and past future is that they are contracted in many verbs even when the infinitive is uncontracted: as **vedére**, *to see*, **vedrò**; **veníre**, *to come*, **verrêi**.

2. From the first person singular of the past absolute the other irregular persons can be constructed, the third person singular by changing the ending **-i** to **-e**, the third person plural by adding **-ro** to the third person singular.²

3. The *regular* persons of the past absolute and the whole past subjunctive are slightly irregular in **dáre** and **stáre**, which substitute **e** for **a** in those forms (**déstì**, **démmo**, **déste**, **déssi**; **stéstì**, **stémmo**, **stéste**, **stéssi**).

4. **Díre** (for **dícere**) and **fáre** (for **fácere**) have **díte** and **fáte** in the second person plural of the present indicative.

(a) Verbs whose stem ends in **-i**, **-n**, or **-r** often drop final **e** or **i** in the singular of the present indicative and imperative:

Non vuôl andáre.
Viên qui.

He will not go.
Come here.

See also 63, *a*, *b*, *c*.

¹ See 66, 3.

² This rule applies only to an *irregular* past absolute.

(b) The three forms of the imperative are exactly like the corresponding persons of the present indicative, except in **avére**, **sapére**, and **volére**, where they follow the subjunctive:

| | | |
|--------------|-----------------|-----------------|
| ábbi | abbiámo | abbiáte |
| sáppi | sappiámo | sappiáte |
| vôgli | vogliámo | vogliáte |

and in **andáre**, **dáre**, **díre**, **fáre**, and **stáre**, which have in the singular **va'**, **da'**, **di'**, **fa'**, **sta'**.

(c) The third person plural of the present indicative can always be constructed from the first person singular, from which can be formed also the whole present subjunctive except the first and second persons plural: these can be made from the first person plural of the present indicative.

EXCEPTIONS to this rule are **andáre**, **avére**, **dáre**, **fáre**, **sapére**, and **stáre**, which have in the third person plural of the present indicative **vánno**, **hánno**, **dánno**, **fánno**, **sánno**, **stánno**; while **avére**, **dáre**, **sapére**, and **stáre** have in the present subjunctive **ábbia**, **dia**, **sáppia**, **stia**.

67. With the aid of the above notes any verb except **êssere** can be constructed from the infinitive, the participles (the present participle often being necessary to show the uncontracted form of the infinitive), the present indicative, and the first person singular of the past absolute and future. A list of irregular verbs begins on page 80.

(a) In general, compound verbs not differing in conjugation from their simple verbs will be omitted from this list. All compounds of **dáre** and **fáre** are accented on the same syllable as the simple verbs:

| | | | |
|------------|-----------------|---------------|-------------------|
| Fa. | <i>He does.</i> | Disfà. | <i>He undoes.</i> |
|------------|-----------------|---------------|-------------------|

The compounds of **stáre** demand special mention: **rístáre**, **so-prastáre**, **sottostáre**, **sovraстáre** are inflected like **stáre** (**rístà**, **so-prastétti**, **sottostáno**); **distáre** has no present participle, is regular in the present of all moods (**dísto**, etc.), but otherwise is inflected

like *stáre* (*distétti*, etc.); *constáre*, *contrastáre*, *instáre*, *ostáre*, *prestáre*, *restáre*, *sostáre* are regular throughout (*cônta*, *contrâstano*, *instái*, *ostárono*, *presterô*, *rêsti*, *sostássi*).

68. In old Italian and in poetry both regular and irregular verbs differ in many ways from the normal types: some of the commonest variations are given below.

(a) In the first and third persons singular and the third person plural of the past descriptive **v** is often dropped, but never in the first conjugation: *voléva*=*voléa* (also *volía*); *finívano*=*finíano*. Some of these forms are not uncommon in modern prose.

(b) The past future endings *-êi*, *-êbbe*, *-êbbero* are generally replaced in poetry by *-ía*, *-ía*, *-íano*: *crederêi*=*credería*.

(c) The future endings *-ò*, *-ánno* are sometimes replaced by *-ággio* or *-ábbo*, *-aggiono* or *-ábbono*: *amerò*=*amerággio*; *ameránno*=*amerábbono*.

(d) In the third person plural of the past absolute *-no* or *-ono* is often dropped: *amárono*=*amâro* or *amâr* (also *amôrno*, *amôrno*). In the third person singular we find *amáo*, *credéo*, *sentío*.

(e) Final *-ero* is often replaced by *-ono*: *avrêbbero*=*avrêbbono*.

(f) In the first person plural final **o** is often dropped, and then the **m** sometimes becomes **n**: *andiámo*=*andiám* or *andián*.

(g) In the first person plural of the present indicative of the second and third conjugations *-iámo* may be replaced by *-émo*.

(h) Final *-íano*, wherever it occurs (also *-éano* in the imperfect), may be replaced by *-íeno* or *-iêno*: *avévano*=*aviêno*.

(i) At the end of a word we often find **e** for **i**, sometimes **i** for **e**: *pênsi*=*pêNSE*; *ascoltáte*=*ascoltáti*.

(j) **E** is sometimes added to a word ending in an accented vowel: *amô*=*amôe*.

MOODS AND TENSES

69. The English gerund in *-ing* used as subject, predicate nominative, or direct object of a verb must be rendered in Italian by the *infinitive*, nearly always preceded by the definite article.

| | |
|---|--|
| Mi piáce il viaggiáre. | <i>I like traveling.</i> |
| Rifársela cógli animáli è da sciôcchi. | <i>Taking vengeance on animals is folly.</i> |
| La nôstra prima cûra fu il cercáre úna pensióne. | <i>Our first care was hunting up a boarding house.</i> |
| Ódio lo studiáre. | <i>I hate studying.</i> |

70. The English gerund preceded by a preposition is translated as follows:

1. If the preposition is a necessary part of the thought, it is expressed in Italian, and the English gerund is rendered by the infinitive with the definite article. This article is, however, omitted (unless it would be used in English) after the following prepositions:

| | | |
|-----------------|------------------------|-----------------|
| di, of. | invéce di, instead of. | sénza, without. |
| dópo di, after. | príma di, before. | |

| | |
|---|---|
| Óltre il fâre scarabôcchi scríve mâle. | <i>Besides making blots he writes badly.</i> |
| Parlái cóntra il trárre útile di quél- la disgrázia. | <i>I spoke against utilizing that mis- fortune.</i> |
| Il vízio di fumáre. | <i>The habit of smoking.</i> |
| Ho l' abitúdine di coricármì târdi. | <i>I am in the habit of going to bed late.</i> |
| Invéce di dírmi tútto. | <i>Instead of telling me everything.</i> |
| Príma di moríre. | <i>Before dying.</i> |
| Parliámo sénza riflêtttere. | <i>We speak without thinking.</i> |

2. If in English the omission of the preposition, although it made the construction awkward, would not essentially change the

meaning, the phrase is rendered in Italian by the present participle without any preposition.

| | |
|---|---|
| Studiândo si impâra. | (Through) studying we learn. |
| Dovrêi corrispôndere álla súa cortesia ascoltândola. | I ought to acknowledge her courtesy (by) listening to her. |
| Partêndo incontrò un amico. | (On) going away he met a friend. |
| Copiândo non fa erróri. | (In) copying he makes no mistakes. |

3. *To amuse one's self by . . . and to weary one's self by . . .* are divertírsi a . . . and affannârsi a . . . with the infinitive:

| | |
|---------------------------|---|
| Si divêrte a tirár sássi. | <i>He amuses himself throwing stones.</i> |
|---------------------------|---|

Some other verbs often take this construction.

71. Following are some other rules for the use of the infinitive and participles:

(a) When any verb is used as an auxiliary, the mood and tense are expressed in that verb, and not in the dependent infinitive (see 57).

| | |
|---------------------|------------------------------|
| Avrêi potûto fárlo. | <i>I could have done it.</i> |
|---------------------|------------------------------|

(b) After **fâre**, *to make* or *to have* (= *to cause*), **sentire** and **udire**, *to hear*, and **vedére**, *to see*, the Italian present infinitive is used to render an English past participle. After **lasciare**, *to let*, and often after the preposition **da** an Italian active infinitive is used to translate a passive one in English.

| | |
|------------------------------|---|
| Si fa capíre. | <i>He makes himself understood.</i> |
| Farò fâre un páio di scárpe. | <i>I shall have a pair of shoes made.</i> |
| L' ho sentito díre. | <i>I have heard it said.</i> |
| Lo víde ammazzâre. | <i>He saw him killed.</i> |
| Si láscia ingannâre. | <i>He lets himself be deceived.</i> |
| Non c' è niênte da fâre. | <i>There is nothing to be done.</i> |

(c) The Italian past participle is inflected like any other adjective. The present participle (which was originally an ablative gerund) is invariable.

When in English the present participle is used adjectively, without any verbal force whatsoever, it is translated, not by the

form we have called the participle, but by a verbal adjective, which can be formed from almost any Italian verb by changing the infinitive ending into **-ânte** for the first conjugation, and into **-ênte** for the others. This adjective may be used substantively. It was originally a present participle, and some Italian writers have used it as such.

| | |
|-------------------------|--------------------------------|
| Quésti vási sóno rótti. | <i>These vases are broken.</i> |
| La dôンna sta cucêndo. | <i>The woman is sewing.</i> |
| Stávano parlândo. | <i>They were speaking.</i> |
| Un animâle parlânte. | <i>A speaking animal.</i> |
| Ácqua bollênte. | <i>Boiling water.</i> |
| Dúe amânti. | <i>Two lovers.</i> |

(d) A whole conditional clause (or protasis) is often replaced in Italian by a present participle, or by an infinitive with **a**.

| | |
|---------------------------|--|
| Andândovi lo vedrêbbe. | <i>If he went there, he would see it.</i> |
| A bucârsi êsce il sângue. | <i>If you prick yourself, blood comes.</i> |

(e) Writers sometimes use, instead of a clause in indirect discourse, an infinitive followed by the word that would have been subject of the clause.

| | |
|---|--|
| Dísse êssere quéstó l' uômo che cercavâmo. | <i>He said this was the man we were looking for.</i> |
|---|--|

72. In negative commands the infinitive is always used instead of the second person singular of the imperative.

| | |
|-----------------|------------------------|
| Trôvalo. | <i>Find it.</i> |
| Non lo trovâre. | <i>Do not find it.</i> |

But the negative of **trovâtelô** is **non lo trovâte**.

73. When an action is represented as having taken place and still continuing, the English uses the present perfect or past perfect tense, the Italian the present or the past descriptive.

| | |
|-------------------------------------|---|
| Stûdio l' italiáno da ôtto mési. | <i>I have studied Italian for eight months.</i> |
|-------------------------------------|---|

74. In subordinate clauses referring to the future and introduced by a conjunction of time, where the present is often used in English, the future tense must be employed in Italian.

Quando vi andrò, glielo dirò. *When I go there, I'll tell him.*

(a) The future is often used, without any idea of future time, to express probability.

Sarà uscito.

He has probably gone out.

Avrà molto denaro.

He probably has a great deal of money.

75. The difference between the past descriptive (or imperfect) and the past absolute (or preterit) is this: the latter is used of an event that occurred at a definite date in the past, the former is used in a description or in speaking of an accessory circumstance or an habitual action in past time — the preterit is a narrative, the imperfect a descriptive tense.

The second past perfect (or preterit perfect) is used — instead of the past perfect (or pluperfect) — only after conjunctions meaning *as soon as* (*appena che*, *súbito che*, *tôsto che*), and sometimes after *quando*, *when*, or *dópo che*, *after*, when immediate sequence is denoted.¹

Entrò mentre dormivamo.

He came in while we slept.

Facévo così ogni mattina.

I did so every morning.

Lo féce l' anno scorso.

He did it last year.

Tôsto che l' ebbe visto, uscì.

As soon as he had seen it, he went.

(a) In conversation the present perfect is often used instead of the past absolute, when the event is not remote. This use is, however, far more restricted than it is in French.

Vi sôno andâto ieri.

I went there yesterday.

¹ It is used also in phrases like: *in cíngue minuti ebbe finita la lêttera*, *in five minutes he had the letter finished.*

76. The past future (or conditional), like the English *should* and *would*, has two uses: in *indirect discourse* after a principal verb in a past tense it expresses the tense which in direct discourse would be future¹; in the *conclusion* of a conditional sentence it is used when the conditional clause is (or, if expressed, would be) in the past subjunctive (see **77**).

| | |
|-----------------------------|--|
| Dísse che lo farêbbe. | <i>He said he would do it.</i> |
| Se fósse véro lo crederêi. | <i>If it were true, I should believe it.</i> |
| Quésta cásá mi converrêbbe. | <i>This house would suit me.</i> |

77. When a condition is contrary to *present* fact, or consists of a more or less unlikely supposition referring to *future* time,² the conditional clause has the past (or imperfect) subjunctive, the conclusional clause has the past future (or conditional).

If the unreal condition refers to *past* time, the conditional clause has the past perfect subjunctive, the conclusional clause has the past future perfect.³

Otherwise both condition and conclusion are in the indicative.

| | |
|-----------------------------------|--|
| Se l' avéssi te lo darêi. | <i>If I had it, I should give it thee.</i> |
| Se fósse tornáto l' avrêi vedúto. | <i>If he had returned, I should have seen him.</i> |
| Se veníssse nós ce ne andrémmo. | <i>If he came, we should go.</i> |
| Se vi andássi morrêi. | <i>If I should go there, I should die.</i> |
| Se non è véro è ben trováto. | <i>If it isn't true, it's a good invention.</i> |
| Se lo féce sarà puníto. | <i>If he did it, he will be punished.</i> |

¹ The perfect of the future or the conditional is sometimes used where the simple tense would be expected: *dísse che non l' avrêbbe fatto piû*, *he said he would do it no more.*

² Rendered in English by the past, or by the auxiliary *should*.

³ The imperfect indicative is occasionally used to replace the past or past perfect subjunctive of the condition (or protasis) and the past future or past future perfect of the conclusion (or apodosis): as *se veníva*, *mi dicéva tutto*, *if he had come, he would have told me everything.*

(a) The missing persons of the imperative are supplied from the present subjunctive. The past subjunctive is used to express a wish that is not likely to be realized.

| | |
|-----------------|-------------------------------|
| Si accômodi. | <i>Be seated (sing.).</i> |
| Stíano zítti. | <i>Be quiet (plur.).</i> |
| Sía púre. | <i>Be it so.</i> |
| Vêngano súbito. | <i>Let them come at once.</i> |
| Fósse púre! | <i>Would it were so!</i> |

(b) When a relative clause restricts its antecedent to one of all its possible conditions or actions, the verb of that relative clause is in the subjunctive, — the present subjunctive if the verb on which it depends be present or future, the past if it be past or past future.

| | |
|---|---|
| Non c' è animále piú bellíno d' un gátto gióvane che fác- cia il chiásso. | <i>There is no animal prettier than a kitten that is at play.</i> |
| Dóve troveréte un gióvine che spôsi vói? | <i>Where will you find a young man who will marry you?</i> |
| Vorréi vedére un bel quádro che non fósse antíco. | <i>I should like to see a fine picture that is not old.</i> |

(c) The verb of a subordinate clause depending on an impersonal verb, on a superlative, or on one of the words *first*, *last*, and *only*, is in the subjunctive. This rule does not apply to reflexive verbs, nor to affirmative phrases meaning *it is true* or *it is because*.

| | |
|------------------------------|--|
| Bisognò ch' fo vi andássi. | <i>I had to go there.</i> |
| È giústo che siano puníti. | <i>It's right they should be punished.</i> |
| Il piú bêllo ch' fo conósca. | <i>The finest that I know.</i> |
| Si véde che non è cosí. | <i>You see it isn't so.</i> |
| È véro che ci sóno státo. | <i>It's true that I've been there.</i> |

(d) The subjunctive is used after all conjunctions meaning *although*, *as if*, *unless*, *provided that*, *in order that*, *in such a way that* (denoting purpose), *before*, *until* (referring to future), *whenever*, *wherever*, *without*.

| | |
|--|---|
| Benchè stía nascósto, lo tro- verò, dovínque súa. | <i>Although he be hidden, I shall find him, wherever he is.</i> |
| Partirò a méno che égli non vênga. | <i>I shall go unless he comes.</i> |

Lo féce perchè io venissi.
La divise in môdo che le due
párti fóssero uguáli.
Aspêta finchè io tórni.
Párti sénza che ti véda.

He did it that I might come.
*He divided it in such a way that
the two parts should be equal.*
Wait until I return.
Go without his seeing you.

(e) The subjunctive is used after the indefinite words and phrases **quále che**, **qualúnque**, **chiúnque**, **checchè**, **per quânto**.

Chiúnque vênga.
Qualúnque disgrázia che suc-
cêda.
Per quânto vôlte ci váda.
Per quânto ricco égli sía.

Whoever comes.
Whatever misfortune happens.
However many times I go there.
However rich he may be.

(f) The verb of an indirect question is nearly always in the subjunctive when it depends on a main verb in a past tense.¹

Domândano se il re è mórtio.
Domandò se il pádre fósse
useíto.

They ask whether the king is dead.
*He asked whether his father was
out.*

(g) In a clause dependent on a verb of saying the subjunctive is used if the main verb is negative, or interrogative, or in a past tense.¹

It is generally not used, however, after an affirmative verb in a past tense when the author himself wishes to imply that the indirect statement is true.

Dice che la côsa è chiaríssima.
Non dico che quéstio sía véro.
Díssero che lo zío fósse amma-
láto.
Gli díssi che mi chiamáva En-
ríco.

He says the thing is perfectly clear.
I don't say this is true.
They said their uncle was ill.
I told him my name was Henry.

(h) The subjunctive is used after verbs expressing causation, concession, desire, emotion, prevention, and uncertainty: i.e., after verbs of bringing about; granting, permitting; commanding, hoping, requesting, wishing; fearing, regretting, rejoicing; forbidding, hindering; being ignorant, denying, disbelieving, doubting, expect-

¹ The term *past tense* includes the past future.

ing, pretending, supposing, suspecting, thinking. But **sperare**, *to hope*, very often does not take the subjunctive.

Non so chi siano. *I don't know who they are.*

Vorréi che non fósse accadúto. *I wish it had not happened.*

Supponíamo che sia prováto. *Let us suppose that it is proved.*

Spéro che verrà. *I hope he will come.*

(i) **Se**, *if*, is occasionally omitted before a past subjunctive; in this case the subject, if expressed, must follow the verb.

Saréi felice venisse égli. *I should be happy, should he come.*

CONJUNCTIONS, PREPOSITIONS, AND ADVERBS

CONJUNCTIONS

78. The principal conjunctions are:

| | |
|---|--|
| after, dópo che. | however (before an adj.), qualúndique, per quánto. |
| also, áñche, púre. | |
| although, . benchè, sebbéne, non ostánte che. | if, se (occasionally quándo, óve): in case, cáso. |
| and, e. | in order that, perchè, acciochè, affinchè. |
| as, cóme, quánto (after tánto). | much less, non che. |
| as (=since), siccóme, poichè. | neither . . . nor, nè . . . nè. |
| as fast as, vía vía che. | nevertheless, tuttavía, nondiméno, però. |
| as if, cóme se, quásí. | nor, nè, nemméno, neppúre. |
| as long as, finchè. | nor . . . either, nemméno, neppúre. |
| as well as, cóme ánco. | nor even, neánche, neppúre. |
| because, perchè. | not to say . . . but even, non che . . . ma. |
| before, prima che, avánti che. | or, o, ovvéro, ossía. |
| both . . . and, e . . . e. | or else, ossía. |
| but, ma. | provided that, purchè. |
| either . . . or, o . . . o. | rather, ánzi. |
| even if, áñche se, ancorchè. | since (temporal), dacchè. |
| except that, se non che. | since (causal), poichè, siccóme. |
| for, chè. | so, dúnque, adúnque. |
| granting that, dáto che. | |
| however (=nevertheless), però, púre. | |

| | |
|--|--|
| <i>so that (result), di modo che, sicché.</i> | <i>too, púre, ánche.</i> |
| <i>so that (=in order that), perchè.</i> | <i>unless, a méno che non, eccéttō che non, sénza che.</i> |
| <i>than, che.</i> | <i>until, finchè non.</i> |
| <i>that, che.</i> | <i>when, quándo.</i> |
| <i>that (=in order that), perchè.</i> | <i>whence, dónde.</i> |
| <i>then, dúnque.</i> | <i>where, dóve, óve, là dóve.</i> |
| <i>therefore, dúnque, però, percio,</i> | <i>wherever, dovúnque.</i> |
| <i>adúnque (at the beginning of a clause).</i> | <i>whether, se.</i> |
| | <i>while, méntre, méntre che.</i> |

The final vowel of *ánche*, *che*, *dóve*, *neppúre*, and *óve* is generally elided before *e* or *i*.

(a) Of the above conjunctions the following require the subjunctive:

| | | |
|-----------------------|-------------------------------------|------------------|
| <i>acciochè</i> | <i>cóme se</i> | <i>príma che</i> |
| <i>affinchè</i> | <i>dáto che</i> | <i>purchè</i> |
| <i>a méno che non</i> | <i>dovúnque</i> | <i>qualúnque</i> |
| <i>ancorchè</i> | <i>eccéttō che non</i> | <i>quási</i> |
| <i>avánti che</i> | <i>non ostánte che</i> | <i>sebbéne</i> |
| <i>benchè</i> | <i>perchè meaning in order that</i> | <i>sénza che</i> |
| <i>cáso</i> | <i>per quanto</i> | |

For the use of *che*, *that*, with the subjunctive, see 77, *c, g, h*. *Cóme* is occasionally used for *cóme se*, and then it takes the subjunctive. *Finchè* when referring to the future sometimes has the sense of *finchè non*, and then it generally takes the subjunctive. *Se* is followed by the subjunctive when it introduces an indirect question or statement dependent on a verb in a past tense, or a condition contrary to fact. *Quándo* and *óve*, meaning *if*, frequently take the subjunctive when *se* would not. — For examples, see 77, *c, d, f, g, h*.

(b) **Che** cannot be omitted in Italian as *that* is in English:¹

Dísse **che** fósse véro. *He said it was true.*

Se can be omitted before an imperfect subjunctive (see 77, *i*).

¹ It is omitted, however, in the following peculiarly Italian construction: *il ragázzo paréva fósse felice*, *the boy seemed to be happy*; that is, between a verb of seeming and the subjunctive dependent on it, when in English the construction would be a verb of seeming with a dependent infinitive. It is occasionally omitted also after verbs of wishing, hoping, and fearing: as *spéro mi scríva préstō*, *I hope you will write to me soon*.

(c) **E** and **o** are often written **ed** and **od** before a vowel.

Mío pádre **ed** io.

My father and I.

(d) Between a verb of motion and an infinitive **and** is rendered by the preposition **a**.

Andrò **a** cercárlo.

I'll go and look for it.

(e) When **ánche**, *also* or *too*, relates to a personal pronoun, the disjunctive form of that pronoun must follow **ánche**, even if some form of the same pronoun has already been expressed.

Andrémo ánche **nói**.

We shall go too.

Párte anch' **égli**.

He goes away too.

Trováí ánche **lúi**.

I found him too.

Vénnero anch' **éssi**.

They came too.

Lo *or* me lo diéde anche **a me**.

He gave it to me too.

Ti piáce ánche **a te**.

You like it too.

PREPOSITIONS

79. The principal prepositions are:

about (=approximately), **círca**.

beside (place), **accánto a**.

about (=around), **intórno a**, **at-**
tórnio a.

besides, *beside* (=in addition to),
óltre.

above, **sópra**.

between, **fra**, **tra**.

according to, **secóndo**.

beyond, **óltre**, **al di là di**.

after, **dópo**, **dópo di**.

by, **da**, **accánto a** (=beside).

against, **cóntra**, **cóntro**.

by means of, **per** **mêzzo di**.

along, **lúngo**.

during, **durânte**.

among, **fra**, **tra**.

except, **tránne**, **eccétto**, **fuôri di**.

around, **intórno a**, **attórno a**.

from, **da**, **fin da**.

as far as, **fíno a**, **síno a**.

in, **in**.

as for, **per**, **quánto a**, **in quánto a**.

in front of, **davânti a**, **innânci**.

as to, **rispêtto a**.

inside of, **déntrö di**.

at, **a**.

instead of, **invéce di**.

because of, **per** **motívö di**.

in the midst of, **in** **mêzzo a**.

before (time), **príma di**, **innânci**.

into, **in**.

before (place), **davânti a**, **innânci**.

near, **vicíno a**.

behind, **diéstro**.

of, **di**.

below, **sótto**.

on, **su** (before a vowel, **sur**), **sópra**.

| | |
|--|---|
| <i>on this side of</i> , al di qua di. | <i>through, per.</i> |
| <i>on to, su</i> (before vowels, sur), só- pra. | <i>under, sotto.</i> |
| <i>opposite, dirimpêto a.</i> | <i>upon, su</i> (before vowels, sur), só- pra. |
| <i>out of, da, di, fuôri di.</i> | <i>up to, fino a, sino a.</i> |
| <i>outside of, fuôri di.</i> | <i>with, con.</i> |
| <i>over, sópra.</i> | <i>within, fra, tra.</i> |
| <i>round and round, tórnó tórnó a.</i> | <i>within (=inside of), dentro di.</i> |
| <i>since, da.</i> | <i>without, senza.</i> |
| <i>to, a.</i> | <i>without (=outside of), fuôri di.</i> |
| <i>toward, vêrso.</i> | |

When governing a personal pronoun **cóntra**, **diêtro**, **dópo**, **sénza**, **sópra**, **sotto**, and often **fra** and **vêrso** take *di* after them:

sénza di me, without me.

fra di lóro, among themselves.

After **con**, **in**, **per**, a word beginning with **s** impure generally prefixes **i**:¹

la stráda, the street.

in istráda, in the street.

(a) *To* before the name of a country, after a verb of motion, is **in**.

Andiámo in Fráncia.

Let us go to France.

(b) *To* before an infinitive is rendered in Italian as follows:

1. After the verbs

| | | |
|----------------------------|-----------------------------|------------------------------|
| bastáre, suffice | fâre, make | sentíre, hear, feel |
| bisognâre, need | lasciâre, let | solére, be accustomed |
| conveníre, suit | parére, seem | udíre, hear |
| desiderâre, desire | potére, can, be able | vedére, see |
| dovére, must, ought | sapére, know | volére, wish |

to before a following infinitive is omitted. It is omitted also in exclamations and indirect questions consisting only of an interrogative and an infinitive.

Dovrêi capíre.

I ought to understand.

Bisóagna pensárei.

It is necessary to look out for it.

Potrémo veníre.

We shall be able to come.

Non sa che fâre nè dóve avvôl-

He doesn't know what to do nor

gersi.

where to turn.

¹ Cf. 58, a.

' 2. After verbs of accustoming, attaining, beginning, compelling, continuing, hastening, helping, inviting, learning, preparing, teaching, and after verbs of motion, *to* before a following infinitive is **a**.

| | |
|----------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| Andránno a vedérla. | <i>They will go to see her.</i> |
| Si affrettò a rispóndere. | <i>He hastened to reply.</i> |

3. After all other verbs it is **di**; but *to* denoting purpose or result is **per**, and *to* indicating duty or necessity is **da**.

| | |
|--------------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| Gli díssi di scrívere. | <i>I told him to write.</i> |
| Mi è gráto di dírla. | <i>I am happy to say so.</i> |
| Légge per divertírsi. | <i>He reads to amuse himself.</i> |
| È trôppo bássو per arrivárci. | <i>He's too short to reach it.</i> |
| Ho qualchecôsa da fáre. | <i>I have something to do.</i> |

(c) *By* denoting the agent is **da**.

| | |
|-------------------------|----------------------------|
| Fu fáttô da lúi. | <i>It was done by him.</i> |
|-------------------------|----------------------------|

(d) *In* is **in**; but when expressing future time it is **fra**.

| | |
|-----------------------------|---|
| Fra tre giórni sarà finítô. | <i>In three days it will be finished.</i> |
|-----------------------------|---|

(e) *For* is **per**: as *I' ha fáttô per me*, *he has done it for me*. But, in the sense of *since*, in speaking of past time, *for* is **da**. *For* meaning *during* is omitted or translated **durânte**. Sentences like *it is right for him to do it* must be translated by **che** with the subjunctive: **è giûsto che lo fáccia**.

| | |
|--|--|
| Dimôra da mólti ánni a Firênze. | <i>He has lived for many years at Florence</i> (see 73). |
|--|--|

| | |
|---------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| Resterò cíngue settimáne. | <i>I shall stay for five weeks.</i> |
|---------------------------|-------------------------------------|

| | |
|-------------------------|-------------------------------|
| Piòvve durânte un mése. | <i>It rained for a month.</i> |
|-------------------------|-------------------------------|

| | |
|------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| Bisórgna ch' fo vâda. | <i>It is necessary for me to go.</i> |
|------------------------------|--------------------------------------|

(f) *From* is **da**; but before adverbs and sometimes after verbs of departing it is **di**. In speaking of time it is generally **fin da**.

| | |
|--------------------------|-------------------------------|
| Arrívâ da Parígi. | <i>He arrives from Paris.</i> |
|--------------------------|-------------------------------|

| | |
|--------------------------|-----------------------------|
| È lontâno di qua. | <i>It is far from here.</i> |
|--------------------------|-----------------------------|

| | |
|----------------------|-------------------------------|
| Èsco di cásâ. | <i>I go out of the house.</i> |
|----------------------|-------------------------------|

| | |
|---------------------------|----------------------------|
| Fin dal princípîo. | <i>From the beginning.</i> |
|---------------------------|----------------------------|

(g) **Da** has, in addition to the meanings *by*, *from*, *since*, another sense hard to render in English: it may be translated *as*, *charac-*

teristic of, destined for, such as to, or suited to, according to the context. **Da** means also *at the house of* or *to the house of*. **Da** corresponds to English *on, at, or to* before the word *side, párte,* used in its literal sense.

| | |
|---|--|
| Prométto da uômo d' onôre. | <i>I promise as a man of honor.</i> |
| Il Salvíni da Otêllo. | <i>Salvini as Othello.</i> |
| Saréste tánto buôno da veníre? | <i>Would you be so good as to come?</i> |
| Quésto è da sciôchchi. | <i>This is acting like a fool.</i> |
| Il bambíno ha un giudízio da grande. | <i>The child has the judgment of a grown person.</i> |
| La sála da pránzo. | <i>The dining-room.</i> |
| Úna tázza da caffè. | <i>A coffee-cup.</i> |
| L' ho vedúto dal Signór Néri. | <i>I saw him at Mr. Neri's.</i> |
| Viène da me. | <i>He comes to my house.</i> |
| Da quésta párte. | <i>On this side.</i> |

(h) **A** is often used before a noun — not indicating material (which is expressed by **di**) nor purpose (expressed by **da**) — that describes another noun, when in English these two substantives would form a compound word.

| | |
|----------------------------------|------------------------------|
| Úna máccchina a vapóre. | <i>A steam-engine.</i> |
| Úna sêdia a dóndolo. | <i>A rocking-chair.</i> |
| Úno sgabêllo a tre piêdi. | <i>A three-legged stool.</i> |

(i) **Èssere per** or **stâre per** means *to be about to.*

| | |
|---------------------------|---|
| Stáva per parlâre. | <i>He was on the point of speaking.</i> |
|---------------------------|---|

(j) In some idiomatic phrases **di** is used in Italian when another preposition would be employed in English.

| | |
|-------------------------------------|--|
| Di giórno, di nôtte. | <i>By day, by night.</i> |
| Èssere contênto di úna côsa. | <i>To be satisfied with a thing.</i> |
| Vívô di páne. | <i>I live on bread.</i> |
| Che facéva délle fôrbici? | <i>What did he do with the scissors?</i> |

ADVERBS

80. 1. Adverbs, unless they begin the clause, are generally placed immediately after the verb; **non**, however, always precedes the verb. When a compound tense is

used, the adverb nearly always follows the past participle, but **già**, **mái**, **più**, and **sêmpre** usually precede it. See also **84**.

Non precedes a conjunctive and follows a disjunctive pronoun.

Non ci vâdo **mái**.

I never go there.

Ho parlâto spéssso.

I have often spoken.

Non ha sêmpre parlâto **così**.

He hasn't always talked so.

Io non lo vêdo.

I don't see him.

2. Adverbs are compared like adjectives (see **31**); but *better*, *worse*, *more*, *less* are respectively **mêglio**, **pêggio**, **più**, **ménlo**.

81. *Yes* is **sì** or **già**: **sì** when it expresses real affirmation, **già** when it denotes passive assent. *No* is **no**. *Not* is **non**, after which a word beginning with **s** impure generally prefixes **i**. *Or not* at the end of a clause is **o no**:

Le piáce? — **Sì**.

Do you like it? — Yes.

Che tempâccio! — **Già**.

What nasty weather! — Yes.

Sta bêne? — **No**.

Is he well? — No.

Non istâ bêne.

He isn't well.

Sia véro **o no**.

Whether it be true or not.

(a) *What?* meaning *what do you say?* is **cóme?** **Che** and the interjection **o** are often used to introduce questions.

O perchè non rispondéte? — *Why don't you answer? — What?*
Cóme? — **Che** siête sórdo, — *Are you deaf, sir?*
signóre?

(b) *Very* is **mólto** (see, however, **35, a**). Instead of using a word or suffix for *very*, the Italians often repeat the emphasized adjective or adverb.

È mólto bêllo *or* è bellíssimo. *It is very beautiful.*

I suôi genítóri êrano pôveri *His parents were very poor.*
pôveri.

82. *Only* may be translated by the adverb **sólo**, **soltânto**, **or solaménte**; or by the adjective **sólo**. When it modifies

anything but a verb, it is often rendered by **non . . . che**, with the whole verb intervening, and with the word modified by *only* immediately after **che**.

Non ne ho compráto che dúa. *I have bought only two of them.*

83. *Never* is **non . . . mái**, with the inflected part of the verb intervening. *Just*, as an adverb of time, is **or óra**. *Early* is **prêsto**, *per têmpo*, or **di buôn' óra**. *This morning* is **stamáne**; *last night* is **stanôtte**. *The day after to-morrow* and *the day before yesterday* are respectively **domán l' áltro** and **iér l' áltro**. *A week, a fortnight from to-day* are **óggi a ôtto**, **a quíndici**. *Ago* is translated by **fa**, which follows the substantive of time; if this substantive is plural, *ago* may be rendered also by **sóno** (**êrano** or **saránno** if the date from which time is counted be past or future).

| | |
|------------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| Non ti ha mái vedúto. | <i>He has never seen thee.</i> |
| Son arriváti or óra. | <i>They have just arrived.</i> |
| Tre ánni fa. | <i>Three years ago.</i> |
| Quâtro giórni sóno. | <i>Four days ago.</i> |
| Lunedì êrano dúa settimáne. | <i>Two weeks ago Monday.</i> |
| Dománi saránno cíngue mési. | <i>Five months ago to-morrow.</i> |

84. *Here* and *there*, when they denote a place already mentioned, and no particular stress is laid upon them, are **ci** and **vi**, which are often used in Italian when they would be superfluous in English; *there is, there are, etc.*, are **c' è** or **vi è**, **ci sóno** or **vi sóno**, etc. (sometimes **vi ha**). **Ci**, **vi**, and also **ne**, *thence*, occupy the same positions with regard to the verb, and undergo the same changes, as the pronouns **ci**, **vi**, **ne** (48, 50); they precede conjunctive pronouns beginning with **l** or **n**, and follow all others: **ce lo mánda**, **ti ci mándo**.

When emphasized, *here* is **qui** or **qua**, *there* indicating a place near the person addressed is **costì** or **costà**, and *there*

denoting a point remote from both speaker and hearer is **lì** or **là**.

Cárlo vi è tornáto.
 Álla scuôla non **ci** vâdo.
 Vói rimarréte **costâ**, égli
 resterà laggiù, ed io non
 partirò di qui.

*Charles has gone back there.
 I don't go to school.
 You will remain where you are, he
 will stay down there, and I shall
 not move from here.*

(a) *Here I am, here it is, etc., are **èccomi**, **èccolo**, etc.*

85. Most adverbs of manner are formed by adding **-ménte** to the feminine singular of the corresponding adjective. Adjectives in **-le** and **-re** drop their final **e** in forming the adverb. See **35, a.**

frâncô, *frank.*
 felíce, *happy.*
 piacévole, *pleasant.*

francaménte, *frankly.*
feliceménte, *happily.*
piacevolm nte, *pleasantly.*

(a) *So meaning it is translated lo:*

| | |
|-------------------|----------------------|
| Lo f ccio. | <i>I do so.</i> |
| Lo cr de. | <i>He thinks so.</i> |
| Lo d cono. | <i>They say so.</i> |

INDEFINITE PRONOUNS

86. *One, people, we, you, they, used in an indefinite sense, are rendered in Italian by the reflexive construction with **si** (see 55).*

| | |
|------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| Si c nta b ne in It lia. | <i>They sing well in Italy.</i> |
| Si fa cos . | <i>You do this way.</i> |
| Se ne p rla. | <i>People speak of it.</i> |
| Si f nno sp sso qu ste c se. | <i>One often does these things.</i> |

87. *All as a substantive is **t utto** (t utti, etc.):*

| | |
|------------------|-------------------------|
| Tac vano t utti. | <i>All were silent.</i> |
|------------------|-------------------------|

The adjective *all, the whole* is **tútto** followed by the definite article.

| | |
|----------------------------|--|
| Tútta la têrra. | <i>The whole earth.</i> |
| Tútto il giórno. | <i>All day.</i> |
| Tútte le románe son bêlle. | <i>All Roman ladies are beautiful.</i> |

88. *Any*, when it really adds nothing to the sense, is omitted:

| | |
|---------------|--------------------------------|
| Non ha líbri. | <i>He hasn't (any) books.</i> |
| Voléte víno? | <i>Do you want (any) wine?</i> |

When, however, this redundant *any* might be replaced by *any of the*, it is translated by the partitive construction (see **12, a**):

| | |
|------------------|---------------------------------------|
| Voléte del víno? | <i>Do you want any (of the) wine?</i> |
|------------------|---------------------------------------|

Any used substantively in the sense of *any of it, any of them* is **ne** (see **47, 3**):

| | |
|----------------|----------------------------|
| Non ne ho. | <i>I haven't any.</i> |
| Non ne ha più. | <i>He hasn't any more.</i> |
| Ne avéte? | <i>Have you any?</i> |

Any used adjectively and meaning *any whatsoever* is **qualúncue**:

| | |
|---|---|
| Lo fa méglio di qualúncue áltra persóna. | <i>He does it better than any other person.</i> |
|---|---|

89. *Some*, when it adds nothing to the sense, is omitted or rendered by the partitive construction:

| | |
|--------------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| Voléte búrre or voléte del búrro? | <i>Will you have some butter?</i> |
|--------------------------------------|-----------------------------------|

Some meaning *some of it, some of them* is **ne**:

| | |
|--------|---------------------|
| Ne ha. | <i>He has some.</i> |
|--------|---------------------|

Otherwise *some* is **alcúno** or **quálche**. **Quálche** is always singular (even when the meaning is plural), and is never used substantively.

Alcúne persóne or **quálche** *Some persons.*

persóna.

Alcúni lo dícono. *Some say so.*

90. *Some . . . others, the one . . . the other, one . . . another* are translated by **chi . . . chi**, **áltre . . . áltre**, **l' úno . . . l' altro**, or **alcúni . . . alcúni**.

Alcúni used in this way is always plural. A verb whose subject is **chi** or **áltre** (used in this sense) is always singular; **altri** is not used after prepositions. But **l' úno** and **l' altro** can be used in any case or number.

Tútti, chi più tôsto, e chi *All died, some sooner, some later.*
méno, morívano.

Áltre cáde, áltre fûgge. *Some fall, others flee.*

Gli úni son buôni, gli áltre *Some are good, others bad.*
cattívi.

91. Following is a list of some other indefinite pronouns and adjectives:

anybody, qualcúno, qualchedúno,
chicchessía, pronouns.

any more, più, ne . . . più, pron.

anything, qualchecôsa, pron.

anything else, áltro, pron.

both, tútti e dûe, l' úno e l' altro,
ambedûe, pron. or adj.

certain, cêrto, adj.

each, ógni, ciascúno, ognúno, adj.

either, l' úno o l' altro, pron. or
adj.

every, ógni, ciascúno, ognúno, cia-
shedúno, adj.

everybody, tútti (pl.), ciaschedúno,
ciascúno, ognúno, pron.

everything, tûtto, pron.

few, a few, pôchi (pl.), pron. or adj.

however much (or many), per
quanto (-ti), adj.

little, pôco, pron. or adj.

less, méno, pron. or adj.¹

many, mólti, pron. or adj.²

more, più, pron. or adj.

much, móltio, pron. or adj.

neither, non . . . l' úno nè l' altro,
nè l' úno nè l' altro, pron. or
adj.

no, non . . . nessúno, non . . . al-
cúno, adj.

nobody, non . . . nessúno, pron.

¹ *Less=smaller* is più piccolo.

² *A great many* is moltíssimi.

| | |
|---|--|
| <i>no more, non ne . . . più</i> , pron., | <i>somebody, qualchedúno, qualcúno,</i> |
| <i>non . . . più</i> , adj. | <i>pron.</i> |
| <i>none, non ne . . .</i> , pron. | <i>something, qualchecôsa, pron.</i> |
| <i>nothing, non . . . niênte, non . . .</i> | <i>something else, altro, pron.</i> |
| <i>núlla, pron.</i> | <i>such, tâle, adj.</i> |
| <i>nothing else, non . . . più niênte,</i> | <i>such a, un tâle, adj. (but also pron.</i> |
| <i>non . . . più núlla, pron.</i> | <i>in Ital., meaning so-and-so).</i> |
| <i>others, altruí</i> (see 91, d), pron. | <i>whatever, qualúnque (invariable),</i> |
| <i>several, parécchi (fem. parécchie),</i> | <i>adj.</i> |
| <i>pron. or adj.</i> | |

(a) The verb used with **nessúno**, **alcúno**, **niênte**, **núlla** (meaning *no, nobody, nothing*) must be preceded by **non**, *not*, unless this pronoun or adjective precedes the verb.

Non ho visto nessúno.
Nessún pôpolo lo possiede.

I have seen nobody.
No people possesses it.

(b) *Nothing*, followed by an adjective, is **niênte di**.

Non avéte **niênte di** buôno.

You have nothing good.

(c) **Ciascúno**, **ciaschedúno**, **ognúno**, **nessúno**, and **alcúno** when used adjectively are inflected like **úno** (see 14, 15).

(d) **Altruí**, *another, others, our neighbor*, is invariable, and is not used as subject of a verb:

Con **altruí**.
Chi áma **altruí** áma sè stêssso.

With other people.
He who loves his neighbor loves himself.

The prepositions **di** and **a** are sometimes omitted before it:

La móstro altruí.
La vôglia altruí.

I point her out to others.
The will of another.

LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS

Arranged according to Conjugation.¹

92. This list contains no compound verbs except those which differ in conjugation from their simple verbs and those for which no simple verb exists in Italian. With every verb its irregular forms are given: in the same line with the infinitive are the present participle (if it be needed to show the original form of the infinitive), the first person singular of the past absolute indicative, the past participle, and the first person singular of the future indicative (if the future be contracted); immediately below are the present indicative, the imperative, and the present subjunctive, if these parts be peculiar. For **dáre** and **stáre** the whole past absolute and the first person singular of the past subjunctive are given also. **Èssere** is irregular throughout. *All tenses not mentioned are regular.* For peculiar endings, see 63, 68. Note the following rules:

(a) If the *present participle* is given, the following forms, unless expressly mentioned, are to be constructed from its stem: all *past absolute forms with accented endings*, and the whole *past descriptive* and *past subjunctive*. E.g., **fáre**, pres. part. **facêndo**: hence past abs. 2d sing. and 1st and 2d pl., **facésti**, **facémmo**, **facéste**; past descr., **facéva**, etc.; past subj., **facéssi**, etc.

If the present participle is not given, these forms, unless they be mentioned, are to be constructed from the stem of the infinitive. E.g., **veníre**: past abs., **venísti**, **venímmo**, **veníste**; past descr., **veníva**; past subj., **veníssi**.

(b) A past absolute whose 1st pers. sing. ends in **-ái**, **-éi**, **-íi**, or **-étti** (except **détti** and **stétti**) is regular throughout. In any other past absolute the third person singular can be formed from the

¹ Reference to these tables is facilitated by an Alphabetical List of Irregular and Defective Verbs (see page 92). Students are advised not to learn forms in parentheses nor any verbs or forms marked *rare* or *poetical*.

first person by changing final **i** to **e**, and the third person plural by adding **-ro** to the third person singular. E.g., **fáre**, p. abs. **féci**; 3d sing., **féce**; 3d pl., **fécerō**.

(c) If the future is not given, it is to be constructed from the infinitive. The past future always has the same stem as the future. See 65, p. 57.

(d) The imperative, when not given, is like the corresponding forms of the present indicative. See 66, b.

FIRST CONJUGATION

1. **Andáre**, *go*, andái, andáto; andrò (anderò).

| PRES. IND. | | IMPER. | PRES. SUBJ. |
|------------|---------|---------|--------------|
| vádo or vô | andiámo | va' | váda andiámo |
| vái | andáte | andiámo | váda andiáte |
| va | vánno | andáte | váda vágano |

2. **Fáre**, *do*, facêndo, féci,¹ fátto; farò. **Fáre** (*formerly also fácere*) was originally a verb of the third conjugation (see 92, a).

| PRES. IND. | | IMPER. | PRES. SUBJ. |
|------------------|----------|----------|-----------------|
| fáccio or fô | facciámo | fa' | fáccia facciámo |
| fái ² | fáte | facciámo | fáccia facciáte |
| fa ² | fánno | fáte | fáccia fácciano |

3. **Dáre**, *give*, diédi or détti, dáto; darò. *Past subj.* déssi.

| PRES. IND. | PAST. ABS. | IMPER. | PRES. SUBJ. |
|------------|---------------------------------|--------|----------------|
| dô | diédi or détti | | día |
| dái | déstí | da' | día |
| dà | diéde or détte ³ | | día |
| diámo | démmo | diámo | diámo |
| dáte | désté | dáte | diáte |
| dánno | diédero or déttero ³ | | díano or díeno |

¹ In poetry we sometimes find a past abs. **féi**, **fésti**, **fé** or **féo**, **fémmo**, **féste**, **férono** or **féro** or **fénno**; and past descr. **féa**, etc.

² Also **fáci** **fáce**.

³ Also **dié**, sing.; **diér** or **diéro** or **diérono**, pl.

4. **Stâre** (67, a), *stand*, stêtti, státo; starò. *Past subj.* stéssi.

| PRES. IND. | PAST. ABS. | IMPER. | PRES. SUBJ. |
|------------|------------|--------|------------------|
| stô | stêtti | | stía |
| stái | stéstî | sta' | stíâ |
| sta | stêtte | | stíâ |
| stiâmo | stémmo | stiâmo | stiâmo |
| stâte | stêste | stâte | stíâte |
| stârno | stêttero | | stíâno or stíeno |

SECOND CONJUGATION

5. **Avére**, *have*, êbbi, avúto; avrò. See 53, b.¹

6. **Sapére**, *know*, sêppi, sapúto; saprò.

| PRES. IND. | IMPER. | PRES. SUBJ. |
|------------|----------|-------------|
| sô | sappiâmo | sâppia |
| sâi | sapéte | sâppia |
| sa | sârno | sâppia |

7. **Cadére**, *fall*, cáddi, cadúto; cadrò.

| PRES. IND. | PRES. SUBJ. |
|---------------|--------------------|
| câdo (câggio) | cadiâmo (caggiâmo) |
| câdi | cadéte |
| câde | câdono (câggiono) |

8. **Dovére**, *owe*, dovéi (dovêtti), dovúto; dovrò. *Imperative lacking.*

| PRES. IND. | PRES. SUBJ. |
|---|------------------------------|
| dêvo (dêbbo or dêggio) | dêbba (dêva or dêggia) |
| dêvi (dêbbi) | dêbba (dêva or dêggia) |
| dêve (dêbbe) | dêbba (dêva or dêggia) |
| dobbiâmo (deggiamô) | dobbiâmo |
| dovéte | dobbiâte |
| dêvono (dêbbono or dêggiono) ² | dêbbano (dêvano or dêggiano) |

9. **Sedére**, *sit*, sedéi or sedêtti, sedúto.

| PRES. IND. | PRES. SUBJ. |
|----------------|--------------------|
| siêdo or sêggo | siêda or sêgga |
| siêdi | siêda or sêgga |
| siêde | siêda or sêgga |
| | siêdano or sêggano |

¹ In poetry we find: ággio, ábbo, or áio for ho; áve for ha; ággia or áia for ábia; êi for êbbi; a future arò, etc., or averò, etc., and similar forms in the past future.

² Also dêo, dêi, dêe, dovémo, dovéte, dêono or dêrno.

10. **Vedére**, *see*, vídi, vedúito or vísto; vedrò. **Provvedére** *has a future* provvederò; **prevedére** *has prevederò or prevedrò*. *All other compounds are like vedére.*

PRES. IND.

vêdo (véggo or véggio)

vèdi

vède

vediámo (veggíamo)

vedéte

vêdono (vèggono or vèggiono)

PRES. SUBJ.

vêda (vègga or vèggia)

vêda (vègga or vèggia)

vêda (vègga or vèggia)

vediámo (veggíamo)

vediáte (veggíáte)

vêdano (vèggano or vèggiano)

11. **Giacére**, *lie*, giacqui, giaciúto.

PRES. IND.

giáccio giacciámo

giáci giacéte

giáce giácciono

PRES. SUBJ.

giáccia giacciámo

giáccia giacciáte

giáccia giácciano

12. **Piacére**, *please*: like giacére (11).

13. **Tacére**, *be silent*: like giacére (11).

14. **Solére**, *be wont*, sôlito. *No past. abs., fut., past fut., nor imperative.*

PRES. IND.

sôglio sogliámo

suôli soléte

suôle sôgliono

PRES. SUBJ.

sôglia sogliámo

sôglia sogliáte

sôglia sôgliano

15. **Dolére**, *grieve*, dôlsi, dolúto; dorrò.

PRES. IND.

dôlgo (dôglia) dogliámo¹

duôli doléte

duôle dôlgono (dôgliono)

PRES. SUBJ.

dôlga (dôglia) dogliámo¹

dôlga (dôglia) dogliáte

dôlga (dôglia) dôlgano (dôgliono)

16. **Rimanére**, *remain*, rimási, rimásto or rimáso; rimarrò.

PRES. IND.

rimângó rimaniámo²

rimâni rimanéte

rimâne rimângono

PRES. SUBJ.

rimânga rimaniámo²

rimânga rimaniáte

rimânga rimângano

¹ Also dolghiámo: a popular form.

² Also rimanghiámo: a popular form.

17. **Tenére**, *hold*, ténni, tenúto; terrò.

| PRES. IND. | PRES. SUBJ. |
|------------|----------------------|
| têngo | teniámo ¹ |
| tiêni | tenéte |
| tiêne | têngono |

18. **Valére**, *be worth*, válsi, valíto or válso; varrò.

| PRES. IND. | PRES. SUBJ. |
|----------------|--------------------|
| vâlgo (váglio) | vagliámo |
| vâli | valéte |
| vâle | vâlgono (vâgliono) |

19. **Volére**, *wish*, vôlli,² volúto; vorrò.

| PRES. IND. | IMPER. | PRES. SUBJ. |
|-------------------|----------|-------------|
| vôglio (vo') | vogliámo | vôgli |
| vuôi ³ | voléte | vogliámo |
| vuôle | vôgliono | vogliáte |

20. **Parére**, *seem*, párvì, paríto or párso; parrò.

| PRES. IND. | PRES. SUBJ. |
|------------|-------------------|
| páio | paiámo or pariámo |
| pári | paréte |
| páre | páiono |

21. **Potére**, *be able*, potéi, potúto; potrò.⁴ *No imperative.*

| PRES. IND. | PRES. SUBJ. |
|------------------|-----------------------|
| pôssso | possiámo |
| puôi | potéte |
| puô ⁵ | pôsssono ⁵ |

22. **Persuadére**, *persuade*, persuási, persuáso. *Pres. persuádo*, etc.23. **Calére**, *matter*, cálse, calúto. *Impersonal. No fut., past fut., nor imperative. Not modern.*

| PRES. IND. | PRES. SUBJ. |
|------------|-------------|
| cále | câglia |

¹ Also tenghiámo; valghiámo: popular forms.² Also vâlsi.³ Also vuôgli or vuôli.⁴ In poetry we find a fut. porò and a past fut. poría.⁵ Also puôte; pônno.

THIRD CONJUGATION

(e) All irregular verbs of the third conjugation are accented, in the singular and third person plural of the present indicative and subjunctive, on the same syllable as in the infinitive.

(f) Verbs in **-cere** and **-gere** insert no **i** between the **c** or **g** and the **o** or **a** of the present indicative and subjunctive endings, except in the first person plural of both moods and the second person plural of the subjunctive. Cf. 60, last paragraph.

(g) See chapter on Pronunciation, **4, s, d.**

Present Regular

24. **Accêndere**, *light*, accési, accéso.
25. **Afflîggere**, *afflict*, afflîssi, afflîtto.
26. **Álgere**, *be cold*, álsi. *Defective. Rare.*
27. **Allúdere**, *allude*, allúsi (*alludéi*), allúso.
28. **Árdere**, *burn*, ársi, árso.
29. **Arrôgere**, *add*, arrôsi, arrôso or arrôto. *Defective. Rare.*
30. **Assídere**, *besiege*, assísí, assísó. *Rare.*
31. **Assôlvêre**, *absolve*, assolvêtti or assolvéi or assôlsi, assôlto or assóluto. *So risôlvêre (determine). For sôlvêre, dissôlvêre, and risôlvêre (dissolve), see 107.*
32. **Assôrbere**, *absorb*, assôrsi (*not in use*), assôrto. *Rare.*
33. **Avêllere**, *uproot*, avûlse, avûlso. *Defective. Rare.*
34. **Chiûdere**, *shut*, chiúsi, chiúso. *So all verbs in -chiûdere or -clûdere. See, however, 4, s, d.*
35. **Côlere**, *revere*, côlto or cûlto. *Defective. Rare.*
36. **Connêtttere**, *connect*, connêssi (*connettéi*), connêssso (*connettûto*). *Rare.*
37. **Conôscere**, *know*, conôbbi, conosciûto.
38. **Conquídere**, *conquer*, conquísi, conquíso. *Rare.*
39. **Consûmêre**, *consume*, consúnsi, consûnto. *Rare. Presûmêre has also presuméi.*
40. **Contûndere**, *bruise*, contûsi, contûso.
41. **Côrrere**, *run*, córsi, córso.
42. **Crêscere**, *grow*, crêbbi, cresciûto.
43. **Cuôcere**, *cook*, cocêndo, côssi, côtto. *Pres. euôcio or euôco, etc.¹*

¹ In the 1st and 2d persons plural of the pres. ind., subj., and imperative, **uo** is generally replaced by **o**: *cociâmo*, etc. The **uo** occurs in those parts of the verb where the accent falls on that syllable.

44. **Decídere**, *decide*, decísi, decíso.
45. **Difêndere**, *defend*, difési (difendéi), diféso.
46. **Dirígere**, *direct*, diréssi, diréttō.
47. **Discúttere**, *discuss*, discússi (discutéi), discússo.
48. **Distínguere**, *distinguish*, distínsi, distínto.
49. **Divídere**, *divide*, divíssi, divíso.
50. **Elídere**, *elide*, elísi (elidéi), elíso.
51. **Elúdere**, *elude*, elúsi (eludéi or eludétti), elúso.
52. **Êrgere**, *erect*, êrsi, êrto. *Rare.*
53. **Esígere**, *exact*, esigéi (esigétti), esátto.
54. **Esistere**, *exist*, esistéi (esistétti), esistítō.
55. **Espéllere**, *expel*, espúlsi, espúlso. *Rare.*
56. **Esplôdere**, *explode*, esplôsi, esplôso.
57. **Esprímere**, *express*, esprêssi, esprêssso. *So all other verbs in -primere. Prêmere and its compounds with ê are regular.*
58. **Fêndere**, *split*, fendéi (fendétti or fêssi), fendúto or fêssso.
59. **Fíggere** (*fígere*), *fix*, físsi, fítto.
60. **Fíngere**, *feign*, fínsi, fínto.
61. **Fóndere**, *melt*, fúsi (fondéi), fúso (fondúto).
62. **Frângere**, *break*, fránsi, frânto.
63. **Fríggere**, *fry*, fríssi, frítto.
64. **Genuflétttere**, *kneel*, genufléssi, genuflêssso. *Rare.*
65. **Intrídere**, *dilute*, intrísi, intríso.
66. **Intrûdere**, *intrude*, intrúsi, intrúso.
67. **Invâdere**, *invade*, invási, inváso.
68. **Lêdere**, *offend*, lêsi (*not in use*), lêso. *Rare.*
69. **Lêggere**, *read*, lêssi, lêtto.
70. **Lícere** or **lécere**, *be lawful*, lécito or lícito. *Impersonal. Defective. Poetical.*
71. **Lúdere**, *play*, lúsi, lúso. *Rare.*
72. **Mêrgere**, *plunge*, mérssi, mérso. *Rare.*
73. **Méttere**, *put*, méssi or míssi, méssso.
74. **Môlcere**, *soothe*, múlse. *Defective. Rare.*
75. **Môrdere**, *bite*, mórsi, mórsso.
76. **Muôvere**, *move*, movêndo, móssi, móssso.¹
77. **Násccere**, *be born*, nácqui, náto.
78. **Nascóndere**, *hide*, nascósi, nascóstō.
79. **Neglígere** (*see 5, gli*), *neglect*, negléssi, neglêtto.
80. **Offêndere**, *offend*, offési, offéso.
81. **Ostêndere**, *show*. *Defective. Rare.*
82. **Percípere**, *perceive*, percéttō. *Defective. Rare.*
83. **Pêrdere**, *lose*, perdéi or perdétti or pêrsi, perdúto or pêrso.
84. **Piôvere**, *rain*, piôvve (piovè), piovúto. *Impersonal.*

¹ See page 85, footnote.

85. **Pôrgere**, *present*, pôrsi, pôrto.
86. **Prediligere**, *prefer*, prediléssi, predilêtto.
87. **Prêndere**, *take*, prési, préso.
88. **Protêggere**, *protect*, protéssi, protêtto.
89. **Râdere**, *shave*, rási (*radéi*), rásó.
90. **Redímere**, *redeem*, redênsi (*rediméi*), redênto.
91. **Rêggere**, *support*, rêssi, rêtto.
92. **Rêndere**, *render*, rési (*rendéi* or *rendêtti*), résó (*rendúto*).
93. **Rídere**, *laugh*, rísi, ríso.
94. **Riflêtttere**, *reflect*, riflettéi or riflêssi, riflettûto or riflêssó. **Riflêtttere**, *reflect light*, is generally irregular; **riflêtttere**, *meditate*, is usually regular.
95. **Rifúlgere**, *shine*, rifúlsi. *Past part. lacking. Poetical.*
96. **Rilúcere**, *shine*, rilússi or rilucéi. *Past part. lacking.*
97. **Rispôndere**, *answer*, rispôsi, rispôsto.
98. **Ródere**, *gnaw*, rósi, róso.
99. **Rómpere**, *break*, rúppi, rótto.
100. **Scéndere**, *descend*, scési, scésó.
101. **Scíndere**, *sever*, scindéi or scíssi, scísso.
102. **Sciôlvare**, *breakfast*, sciôlsi or sciolvêtti, sciôlto. *Rare.*
103. **Scôrgere**, *perceive*, scôrsi, scôrto.
104. **Scrívere**, *write*, scríssi, scrítto.
105. **Scuôtere**, *shake*, scotêndo, scôssi, scôssso.¹
106. **Soffôlcere**, *support*, soffólse, soffólto. *Defective. Rare.*
107. **Sôlvere**, *undo*, solvéi (*solvêtti*), solútio. *Poetical. So dissôlvere; for assôlvere and risôlvere (determine), see 31.*
108. **Sôrgere**, *rise*, sórsi, sórto.
109. **Sospêndere**, *suspend*, sospési, sospéso. *So appêndere, impêndere. Pêndere is reg.; dipêndere either reg. or irreg.*
110. **Spândere**, *spill*, spandéi or spandêtti, spánto.
111. **Spárger**, *scatter*, spârsi, spárso or spárto.
112. **Spêndere**, *spend*, spési, spéso.
113. **Spêrgere**, *disperse*, spêrsi, spêrso. *Rare.*
114. **Spôrgere**, *project*, spôrsi, spôrto.
115. **Strûggere**, *melt*, strússi, strútto.
116. **Succêdere**, *happen*, succêssi or succeedéi, succêssio or succeedúto. *So concêdere, which has also concedêtti; cêdere and its other compounds are generally regular.*
117. **Súggere**, *suck*, suggéi or sússi. *Past part. lacking. Rare.*
118. **Têndere** (*transitive*), *extend*, tési, téso. *The intrans. verb is reg. but has no past participle.*
119. **Têrgere**, *wipe*, têrsi or tergéi, têrso. *Rare.*
120. **Tôrcere**, *twist*, tôrsi, tôrto.

¹ See page 85, footnote.

121. **Uccidere**, *kill*, uccisi, ucciso.
 122. **Vincere**, *conquer*, vínsi, vínto.
 123. **Vivere**, *live*, víssi, viissúto or vivúto; viverò or vivrò.
 124. **Vôlgere**, *turn*, vôlsi, vôlto.
 125. **Vôlvere**, *turn*, vôlsi, vôlto. *Rare.* **Devôlvere** has a past part. devolúto.

Present Irregular

126. **Èssere**, *be*, fúi, státo; sarò. See 53, a.¹
 127. **Bére** or **bévere**, *drink*, bevêndo, bévvi (bevêtti or bevéi), bevúto (beútio); berò or beverò.

PRES. IND.

bévo or béo beviámo or beiámo
 bévi or béis bevéte or beéte
 bêve or bée bêvono or bêono

PRES. SUBJ.

béva or béra beviámo or beiámo
 béra or béra beviáte or beiáte
 béra or béra bêvano or bêano

128. **Chiêdere**, *ask*, chiêsi (chiési or chiedéi), chiêsto.

PRES. IND.

chiêdo (chiêggo)²
 chiêdi
 chiêde
 chiediámo
 chiedéte
 chiêdono (chiêggono)²

PRES. SUBJ.

chiêda (chiêgga)²
 chiêda (chiêgga)
 chiêda (chiêgga)
 chiediámo
 chiediáte
 chiêdano (chiêggano)²

129. **Condûrre**, *conduct*, conducêndo, condússi, condótto; condurrò.

PRES. IND.

condúco
 condúci
 condúce

PRES. SUBJ.

condúca
 condúca
 condúca

130. **Nuôcere**, *harm*, nocêndo, nôcqui, nociúto.

PRES. IND.

nuôco or nôccio nociámo
 nuôci nocéte
 nuôce nuôcono or nôcciono

PRES. SUBJ.

nuôca or nôccia nociámo
 nuôca or nôccia nociáte
 nuôca or nôccia nuôcano or nôciano

¹ In the past descriptive éramo is often used for eravámo. We find in poetry: sête for siête; énno or en for sóno (third pl.); síe for sía; erámo, eráte for eravámo, eraváte; u for o in the past absolute and past subjunctive; fóro for fúrono; fía, fiano or fieno for sarà, saránno; fóra, fórano for saréi, sarébbe, sarébbero; sêndo for es-sêndo; súto, essúto, or issúto for státo.

² Also chiêggio, chiêggiono, chiêggia, chiêggiano.

131. Pórre, *put*, ponêndo, pósí, pósto; porrò.

| | PRES. IND. | PRES. SUBJ. |
|-------|--------------------|---------------------------|
| póngó | poniámo (pongíamo) | póngga poniámo (pongíamo) |
| póni | ponéte | póngga poniáte |
| póne | póngono | póngga póngano |

132. Trárre (*träere*), *drag*, traêndo, trássi, trátto; trarrò.

| | PRES. IND. | PRES. SUBJ. |
|---------------|-----------------------------------|--|
| trággo | traiámo or traggiámo ¹ | trágga traiámo or traggiámo ¹ |
| trái (träggi) | traéte | trágga traiáte |
| tráe (träggé) | trággono | trágga trágzano |

133. Vêllere (*vêrre*), *tear up*, vêlsi, vêlto; vellerò (*verrò or velgerò*).

Vêllere, which is rare, has not all the forms given here; but its compound, svêllere, has them all.

| | PRES. IND. | PRES. SUBJ. |
|----------------|---------------------|------------------------------------|
| vêllo or vêlgo | velliámo (velgiámo) | vêlla or vêlga velliámo (velgiámo) |
| vêlli (vêlgi) | velléte | vêlla or vêlga velliáte (velgiáte) |
| vêlle (vêlge) | vêllono or vêlgono | vêlla or vêlga vêllano or vêlgano |

134. Côgliere (*côrre*), *gather*, côlsi, côlto; coglierò or corrò.

| | PRES. IND. | PRES. SUBJ. |
|----------------|----------------------|-------------------------------------|
| côlgo (côglia) | cogliámo (colghiámo) | côlga (côglia) cogliámo (colghiámo) |
| côgli | cogliéte | côlga (côglia) cogliáte |
| côglie | côlgono (côgliono) | côlga (côglia) côlgano (côgliono) |

135. Scégliere (*scérre*), *choose*: like côgliere (134).136. Sciôgliere (*sciôrrre*), *untie*: like côgliere (134).137. Tôgliere (*tôrre*), *take*: like côgliere (134).138. Giúngere (*giúgnere*), *to arrive*, giúnsi, giúnto; giungerò (*giungerò*).

| | PRES. IND. | PRES. SUBJ. |
|-----------------------|------------|-----------------------|
| giúngo (giúgno) | | giúnga (giúgna) |
| giúngi (giúgni) | | giúnga (giúgna) |
| giúnge (giúgne) | | giúnga (giúgna) |
| giungiámo (giugniámo) | | giungiámo (giugniámo) |
| giungéte (giugnéte) | | giungiáte (giugniáte) |
| giúngono (giúgnono) | | giúngano (giúgnano) |

139. Cíngere (*cígnere*), *gird*: like giúngere (138).140. Múgnere (*múngere*), *milk*: like giúngere (138).

¹ Also traghiámo.

141. Piángere (*piagnere*), *weep*: like giúngere (138).
 142. Píngere (*pignere*), *paint*: like giúngere (138).
 143. Púngere (*pugnere*), *prick*: like giúngere (138).
 144. Spégnere (*spengere*), *extinguish*: like giúngere (138), except that the forms with *gn* are far commoner than those with *ng*.
 145. Spíngere (*spignere*), *push*: like giúngere (138).
 146. Stríngere (*strignere*), *bind*: like giúngere (138), except that the past part. is stréttō or stríntō. **Costríngere**, *compel*, has for past part. only costréttō.
 147. Tíngere (*tignere*), *dye*: like giúngere (138).
 148. Úngere (*úgnere*), *anoint*: like giúngere (138).

FOURTH CONJUGATION

Present Regular

149. Apríre, *open*, apríi or apêrsi, apêrto. Pres. ápro, etc.
 150. Copríre (*cuopríre*), *cover*, copríi or copêrsi, copêrto. Pres. côpro (*cuôpro*), etc.
 151. Offríre (*offeríre*), *offer*, offríi (*offeríi*) or offêrsi, offêrto. Pres. ôffro (*offerisco*), etc.
 152. Soffríre, *suffer*: like offríre (151).
 153. Convertíre, *convert*, convertíi or convêrsi, convertítō or convêrso. Pres. convêrto or convertísco, etc. All other verbs in -vertíre are reg.
 154. Costruíre (*construíre*), *construct*, co(n)strússi or co(n)struíi, co(n)struítō or co(n)strútto. Pres. co(n)struísco, etc.
 155. Digeríre, *digest*, digeríi, digerítō (*digêsto*). Pres. digerísco, etc.
 156. Esauríre, *exhaust*, esauríi, esaurítō or esáusto. Pres. esaurísco, etc.
 157. Seppellíre or sepellíre, *bury*, sep(p)ellíi, seppellítō or sepólto. Pres. sep(p)ellísco, etc.

Present Irregular

158. Cucíre, *sew*, cucíi, cucítō. Pres. cúcio or cucísco. This verb inserts i before o and a, but not before e and í.
 159. Sdrucíre or sdruscíre, *rip*: like cucíre (158).
 160. Empíre or émpiere, *fill*, empiêndo, empíi, empítō. All but the present from the stem of empíre. So compíre or cómpiere, which has also a past part. compiúto.

PRES. IND.

| | |
|-----------------|---------------------|
| émpio (empísco) | empiámō |
| émpi (empísci) | empítē |
| émpie (empísce) | émpiono (empíscono) |

PRES. SUBJ.

| | |
|-------|---------|
| émpia | empiámō |
| émpia | empiáte |
| émpia | émpiano |

161. **Moríre**, *die*, moríi, môrto; morrò or morirò.

| PRES. IND. | PRES. SUBJ. |
|---------------------------------------|---|
| muôio (muôro) moriâmo or muoiâ- mo | muôia (muôra) moriâmo or muoi- âmo |
| muôri or muôi moríté | muôia (muôra) muoiâte |
| muôre muôiono (muôro- no) | muôia (muôra) muôiano (muôra- no) ¹ |

162. **Seguiré**, *follow*, seguíi, seguító. *Pres. séguo, etc. The verb is generally regular; but the é may be changed to iê in all forms where it is accented. Proseguíre has -séguo or -segúisco.*

163. **Sparíre**, *disappear*, sparíi or spárvi, sparító. *Pres. (regular) sparísco, etc. Apparíre has appárvi or -si or -íi, apparító or appárso; comparíre has compárvi or -si or -íi, compárso; otherwise they are like sparíre, but they have in the present the additional forms: -páio, -páre, -páiono; -páia, -páiano.*

164. **Díre**, *say*, dicêndo, díssi, détto; dirò. *Díre (formerly dícere) belongs really to the third conjugation: dicéstí, -éva, -éssi.*

| PRES. IND. | IMPER. | PRES. SUBJ. |
|------------|---------|-------------|
| díco | diciâmo | di' |
| díci | díte | díca |
| díce | dícono | díte |
| | | díca |
| | | diciâmo |
| | | diciâte |
| | | dícano |

165. **Salíre**, *ascend*, salíi or sálsci, salító.

| PRES. IND. | PRES. SUBJ. |
|-----------------|----------------------------------|
| sâlgo (salísco) | saliâmo or sagliâmo ² |
| sâli (salísci) | salíte |
| sâle (salísce) | sâlgono (salíscono) |
| | sâlga (salísca) |
| | sâlga (salísca) |
| | sâlgano (salíscono) |
| | sâlgano (salísca) |

166. **Veníre**, *come*, vénni, venúto; verrò.

| PRES. IND. | PRES. SUBJ. |
|---------------|----------------------|
| vêngo (vêgno) | veniâmo ² |
| viêni | veníte |
| viêne | vêngono (vêgnono) |
| | vênga (vêgna) |
| | vênga (vêgna) |
| | vêngano (vêgnano) |

167. **Udíre**, *hear*, udíi, udító; udirò (udrò).

| PRES. IND. | PRES. SUBJ. |
|------------|-------------|
| ôdo | udiâmo |
| ôdi | udiâte |
| ôde | ôdono |
| | ôda |
| | udiâmo |
| | udiâte |
| | ôdano |

¹ In all forms where uo occurs, it may be replaced by o.

² Also salghiâmo; venghiâmo: popular forms.

168. **Uscire** (*escíre*), *go out*, uscíi, uscító.

| PRES. IND. | | PRES. SUBJ. | |
|------------|---------|-------------|---------|
| êscó | usciámo | êscá | usciámo |
| êsci | uscíte | êscá | usciáte |
| êscé | êsceno | êscá | êscano |

169. **Oríre**, *be born*, ôrto. *Defective. Rare.*

ALPHABETICAL LIST OF IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS

93. Every irregular verb in this list is followed by a number referring to the table of Irregular Verbs arranged according to Conjugation. Obsolete defective verbs that present no irregularity have not been mentioned.

(a) Compound verbs have, in general, been excluded from this list, unless they differ in conjugation from the simple verbs from which they come (see 67, a). The commonest prefixes are: **a-** (corresponding in meaning to the preposition **a**); **as-** (= Latin *abs-*); **co-, com-, con-, cor-** (= prep. **con**); **contra-** (= prep. **cóntra**); **de-, di-** (= Lat. *de-*); **dis-** (= Lat. *dis-*); **e-, es-** (= Lat. *ex*); **i-, im-, in-, ir-** (= prep. *in*); **o-** (= Lat. *ob*); **per-** (= prep. *per*); **pre-** (= Lat. *prae-*); **pro-** (= Lat. *pro-*); **r-, re-, ri-** (= Lat. *re-*); **s-** (= Lat. *ex-* or *dis-*); **so-, sos-, su-** (= Lat. *sub*); **sopra-, sopr-, sor-** (= prep. **sópra**); **sott-, sotto-** (= prep. **sótto**); **stra-** (= Lat. *extra*); **tra-** (= prep. *tra*). After several of these prefixes the initial consonant of the simple verb is generally found doubled: **a+ca-dére** = accadére. **S-** is sometimes combined with **con-**, **r-** with **a-** or **in-**: **scoscéndere**, **raccôgliere**, **rincórrere**.

Accadére, see **cadére**, 7.

Accêndere, 24.

Acelúdere, see **chiúdere**, 34.

Accôrgere, see **scôrgere**, 103.

Acquisíre has only **acquisítio**.

Addûrre, see **condûrre**, 129.

Afflîggere, 25.

Algere, 26.

Allúdere, 27.

Ancídere, see **uccídere**, 121.

Andáre, 1.

Annêttere, see **connêttere**, 36.

- Antepórre, *see* pórre, 131.
 Antivedére, *p. p. only* antivedúto,
otherwise like vedére, 10.
 Apparíre, *see* sparíre, 163.
 Appartenére, *see* tenére, 17.
 Appéndere, *see* sospéndere, 109.
 Apríre, 149.
 Árdere, 28.
 Arrôgere, 29.
 Ascéndere, *see* scéndere, 100.
 Asciólvere, *see* sciólvere, 102.
 Ascóndere, *see* nascóndere, 78.
 Aspêrgere, *see* spêrgere, 113.
 Assalíre, *see* salíre, 165.
 Assídere, 30.
 Assístere, *see* esístere, 54.
 Assólvere, 31.
 Assôrbere, 32.
 Assúmere, *see* consúmere, 39.
 Avêllere, 33.
 Avére, 5.
 Bére, 127.
 Bévere, *see* bére, 127.
 Cadére, 7.
 Calére, 23.
 Cêdere, *generally reg., sometimes has p. abs.* cêssi, *p. p.* cêssio.
 Chiédere, 128.
 Chiúdere, 34.
 Cígnere, *see* cíngere, 139.
 Cíngere, 139.
 Circoncídere, *see* decidere, 44.
 Côgliere, 134.
 Coincidere, *reg. verb, has no p. p.*
 Côlere, 35.
 Collúdere, *see* lúdere, 71.
 Comparíre, *see* sparíre, 163.
 Compêtere, *reg. verb, has no p. p.*
 Cómpiere, *see* empíre, 160.
 Compíre, *see* empíre, 160.
 Comprímere, *see* esprímere, 57.
 Concêdere, *see* succêdere, 116.
 Conclúdere, *see* chiúdere, 34.
 Concútere, *see* discúttere, 47.
 Condúrre, 129.
 Connétttere, 36.
 Conóscere, 37.
 Conquídere, 38.
 Consístere, *see* esístere, 54.
 Constáre *is reg.*
 Construíre, *see* costruíre, 154.
 Consúmere, 39.
 Contêndere, *see* têndere, 118.
 Contrastáre *is reg.*
 Controvértere, *see* vêrtere.
 Contúndere, 40.
 Convêrgere, *reg. verb, has no p. p.*
 Convertíre, 153.
 Copríre, 150.
 Côrre, *see* côgliere, 134.
 Côrrere, 41.
 Corrispóndere, *see* rispóndere, 97.
 Cospárgere, *see* spárgere, 111.
 Cospêrgere, *see* spêrgere, 113.
 Costruíre, 154.
 Créscere, 42.
 Cucíre, 158.
 Cuôcere, 43.
 Cuopríre, *see* copríre, 150.
 Dáre, 3.
 Decídere, 44.
 Dedúrre, *see* condúrre, 129.
 Delinquere, *reg. verb, has no p. p.. and its p. abs., delinquêtti, is rarc.*
 Deprímere, *see* esprímere, 57.
 Desístere, *see* esístere, 54.
 Devôlvere, *see* vôlvere, 125.
 Difêndere, 45.
 Digeríre, 155.
 Dipêndere, *see* sospéndere, 109.
 Díre, 164.
 Dirígere, 46.
 Dirímere, *reg. verb, has no p. p.*
 Discéndere, *see* scéndere, 100.
 Discúttere, 47.
 Dispêrgere, *see* spêrgere, 113.
 Dissôlvere, *see* sôlvere, 107.
 Dissuadére, *see* persuadére, 22.

Distáre, *reg. in pres. of all moods, no pres. p., otherwise like stáre, 4.*
 Distínguere, 48.
 Distrúggere, *see strúggere, 115.*
 Divedére *has nothing but infin.*
 Divérsgere, *reg. verb, has no p. p.*
 Divídere, 49.
 Dolére, 15.
 Dovére, 8.
 Eléggere, *see lèggere, 69.*
 Elídere, 50.
 Elúdere, 51.
 Émpiere, *see empíre, 160.*
 Empíre, 160.
 Èrgere, 52.
 Erígere, *see dirígere, 46.*
 Esauríre, 156.
 Escíre, *see uscíre, 168.*
 Esclúdere, *see chiúdere, 34.*
 Esígere, 53.
 Esímere, *reg. verb, has no p. p.*
 Esistere, 54.
 Espéllere, 55.
 Esplóodere, 56.
 Esprímere, 57.
 Èssere, 126.
 Estínguere, *see distínguere, 48.*
 Evádere, *see invádere, 67.*
 Fáre, 2.
 Fêndere, 58.
 Fêrvere, *reg. verb, has no p. p., and is rare except in the third pers. of the pres. ind. and past deser.*
 Fígере, *see fíggere, 59.*
 Fíggere, 59.
 Fíngere, 60.
 Fóndere, 61.
 Frángere, 62.
 Fríggere, 63.
 Genuflétttere, 64.
 Giacére, 11.
 Gíre, *defect.: pres. giámo, gíte; past deser. gíva or gía, etc.; imper.*

giámo, gíte; pres. subj. giámo; giáte; no pres. p.; rest reg.
 Giúgnere, *see giúngere, 138.*
 Giúngere, 138.
 Illúdere, *see lúdere, 71.*
 Impéllere, *see espéllere, 55.*
 Impéndere, *see sospéndere, 109.*
 Imprímere, *see esprímere, 57.*
 Incídere, *see decídere, 44.*
 Inclúdere, *see chiúdere, 34.*
 Incúttere, *see discúttere, 47.*
 Indúrre, *see condúrre, 129.*
 Insistere, *see esistere, 54.*
 Instáre *is reg.*
 Instruíre, *see construíre, 154.*
 Inténdere, *see têndere, 118.*
 Intercéndere, *see succéndere, 116.*
 Intrídere, 65.
 Introdúrre, *see condúrre, 129.*
 Intrúdere, 66.
 Invádere, 67.
 Invalére, *p. p. only inválso, otherwise like valére, 18.*
 Íre, *defect.: pres. íte; p. des. íva, etc.; p. abs. ísti, íste, íro; fut. irémo, iréte, iránno; imper. íte; past subj. ísse, íste, íssero; p. p. íto.*
 Istruíre, *see costruíre, 154.*
 Lécere, *see licere, 70.*
 Lédere, 68.
 Lèggere, 69.
 Lícere, 70.
 Lúcere, *reg. verb, has no p. p.*
 Lúdere, 71.
 Mantenére, *see tenére, 17.*
 Mèrgere, 72.
 Mèttere, 73.
 Môlcere, 74.
 Môrdere, 75.
 Moríre, 161.
 Múgnere, 140.
 Múngere, *see mágnera, 140.*
 Muôvere, 76.
 Násdere, 77.

- Nascóndere, 78.
 Neglígere, 79.
 Nuóccere, 130.
 Offéndere, 80.
Offeríre, see offríre, 151.
Offríre, 151.
Opprímere, see esprímere, 57.
Oríre, 169.
Ostáre is reg.
Ostêndere, 81.
Parére, 20.
Percípcere, 82.
Pereuôtere, see seuôtere, 105.
Pêrdere, 83.
Permanére, see rimanére, 16.
Persístere, see esistere, 54.
Persuadére, 22.
Piacére, 12.
Piágner, see piángere, 141.
Piágner, 141.
Pígnere, see píngere, 142.
Píngere, 142.
Piôvere, 84.
Pôrgere, 85.
Pórre, 131.
Pospórre, see pórre, 131.
Possédere, see sedére, 9.
Potére, 21.
Precídere, see decídere, 44.
Preclúdere, see chiúdere, 34.
Predilígere, 86.
Prémere is reg.
Prêndere, 87.
Prestáre is reg.
Presúmere, see consúmere, 39.
Prevedére, see vedére, 10.
Prodúrre, see condúrre, 129.
Protéggere, 88.
Provvedére, fut. and past fut. uncontracted, otherwise like vedére, 10.
Prúdere, reg. verb, has no p. p., and is used only in the third pers.
Púgnere, see púngere, 143.
- Púngere, 143.
Raccôgliere, see côgliere, 134.
Râdere, 89.
Raggiúngere, see giúngere, 138.
Recídere, see decídere, 44.
Redímere, 90.
Rêggere, 91.
Rêndere, 92.
Repêllere, see espêllere, 55.
Reprímere, see esprímere, 57.
Resistere, see esistere, 54.
Restáre is reg.
Ridere, 93.
Ridúrre, see condúrre, 129.
Riflêttere, 94.
Rifúlgere, 95.
Rilúcere, 96.
Rimanére, 16.
Risôlvere (dissolve), see sôlvere, 107.
Risôlvere (determine), see assôlvere, 31.
Rispôndere, 97.
Ristáre, see stáre, 4.
Risúmere, see consúmere, 39.
Ródere, 98.
Rómpere, 99.
Salíre, 165.
Sapére, 6.
Scégliere, 135.
Scéndere, 100.
Seárre, see scéigliere, 135.
Scíndere, 101.
Sciôgliere, 136.
Sciôlvere, 102.
Sciôrre, see sciôgliere, 136.
Scomméttere, see méttere, 73.
Scopríre, see copríre, 150.
Scôrgere, 103.
Serívere, 104.
Seuôtere, 105.
Sdrueíre, 159.
Sdruscíre, see sdrucíre, 159.
Sedére, 9.

- Sedúrre, *see* condúrre, 129.
 Seguíre, 162.
 Sepellíre, *see* seppellíre, 157.
 Seppellíre, 157.
 Sofferíre, *see* soffríre, 152.
 Soffólcere, 106.
 Soffríre, 152.
 Solére, 14.
 Sôlvere, 107.
 Sopprímere, *see* esprímere, 57.
 Soprástáre, *see* stáre, 4.
 Sórgere, 108.
 Sospêndere, 109.
 Sostáre *is reg.*
Sottostáre, see stáre, 4.
Sovrástáre see stáre, 4.
 Spándere, 110.
 Spárger, 111.
 Sparíre, 163.
 Spégnere, 144.
 Spêndere, 112.
Spêngere, see spêgnere, 144.
Spêrgere, 113.
Spígnere, see spíngere, 145.
 Spíngere, 145.
Spôrgere, 114.
 Stáre, 4.
Strídere, reg. verb, has no p. p.
Strígnere, see stríngere, 146.
Stringere, 146.
Strúggere, 115.
*Subíre *is reg.: pres. subíseo.**
Succêdere, 116.
Súggere, 117.
*Sussístere, *see* esístere, 54.*
- Svélle, *see* vélle, 133.
 Tacére, 13.
 Têndere (*trans.*), 118.
 Têndere (*intrans.*), *reg. verb, has no p. p.*
 Tenére, 17.
 Têrgere, 119.
*Tígnere, *see* tíngere, 147.*
 Tingere, 147.
 Tôgliere, 137.
 Tôrcere, 120.
*Tôrre, *see* tôgliere, 137.*
*Tradúrre, *see* condúrre, 129.*
*Tráere, *see* trárre, 132.*
*Transígere, *see* esígere, 53.*
 Trárre, 132.
 Uccídere, 121.
 Udíre, 167.
*Úgnere, *see* úngere, 148.*
Úngere, 148.
 Uscíre, 168.
 Valére, 18.
 Vedére, 10.
 Vélle, 133.
 Veníre, 166.
*Vérre, *see* vélle, 133.*
*Vértere, *reg. verb, is used only in the pres. and past descr.**
*Vilipêndere, *see* sospêndere, 109.*
 Víncere, 122.
 Vívere, 123.
 Volére, 19.
 Vôlgere, 124.
 Vôlvore, 125.

LESSONS AND EXERCISES

LESSON 1. PRONUNCIATION

Study sections 1, 2, 3.

NOTE.—In this and in all other lessons the assignment of a section number means that the *whole* section, including all subdivisions, is to be studied, unless special directions to the contrary are given.

EXERCISE 1

1. *State the quality of the e (close or open) in each of these words, and pronounce each word:* te, tre, nè, sè, potè, è, dièdi, fiêno, Siêna, désti, débito, Alfrédo, prêsto, mérito, Valêrio.

2. *State the quality of the o in each of these words, and pronounce each word:* fo, no, canterò, però, muôre, suôna, nós, ricóveri, Róma, bôve, ôpera, Môdena.

3. *Pronounce:* abitûdine, alfabetô, Alfiêri, altrúi, Amêrica, Am-lêto, andátevène, animáto, augurerái, balenío, benedífrono, benêvolo, bibliôfilo, cavaliêre, colúi, conservatôrio, contadíno, Costantinôpoli, costúi, crêduto, cúi, demoliréte, Demôstene, Doménico, dóve, éi, Emanuêle, erôe, esprimeréste, Faraóne, formidâbile, fúi, Galilêo, Goldóni, idêa, impermalítio, impêro, insubordináto, ío, línea, Lombardía, lúi, lunedì, maêstro, miêi, mío, Nápoli, naufrago, nêutro, nobiltà, nuôra, ôde, oibò, onorévole, ortografiâ, Orviêto, ôvest, Panamà, Páolo, patáta, paúra, perdè, perpendícolo, personalità, pôi, pôvero, responsabilità, restituíti, rimanevâte, Rímini, Rómolo, Rôvere, Seráo, Severíno, suôi, Taormína, úmile, úno, vendè, vói, volontà, vuôto.

LESSON 2. PRONUNCIATION (continued)

Study 4 [omitting (a), (b), (c), (d) under s], 5, 6, 7. Read (a), (b), (c) under s in 4, and 8.

EXERCISE 2

1. Pronounce: cáne, pánca, tásca, cóme, Páscoli, cúra, alcúni, scúdo, clásse, Têcla, crédo, sácro, ascrívere, che, chetáre, ôche, pánchez, máschera, chi, chíno, báchi, párschi, bôschi, chiúdo, richiámo, manchiámo, schiávo, Íschia, Peschiéra, céna, celáre, vóce, viváce, Nocêra, élce, incêndio, ci, civíle, Cimabúe, diêci, táci, Lucía, Mêdici, pôrzi, Púlci, Vínci, ciárla, diciannôve, óncia, márcia, ciêlo, spêcie, ciò, bácio, commércio, Píncio, ciúrma, fanciúllo, accêndere, uccêllo, accidênte, piccíno, fáccia, bôccia, tâccio, piccione, Dúccio, acciúffo, ricciúto, scêna, násce, discêpolo, scíbile, lásci, disciplinái, sciáme, pôscia, lasciò, mesciúto.

2. Pronounce: gálá, tárga, sgarbáto, págo, válgo, sgómbro, gûsto, auguráre, guárdia, Guído, sângue, glôria, anglomanía, mágro, sgridáre, ghétto, pagherò, álghe, sghémbo, ghirlânda, ghinêa, Ghibêrti, súghi, Inghiltêrra, ghiânda, ghiótto, paghiámo, Alighieri, ringhiêra, geláre, gênere, Gênova, agévole, Eugênio, stringêndo, Angêlico, sgeláre, gíro, agitáto, antología, Perugíno, piângi, cângia, Bôrgia, giórno, giovedì, Giovánni, adágio, mángio, giù, giûsto, Giúlio, digiúno, ingiúria, fríggerè, piágge, ôggi, fuggíre, piággià, foggiáre, leggiêro, maggióre, solfeggio, Réggio, aggiûnta, raggiustáre, mágli, bêgli, tîgli, moglîna, medâglia, pigliáre, Cágliari, móglie, cogliêndo, tâglia, lúglia, pagliúcola, figliuôlo, gli, pugnáre, Campágna, Bológna, spûgne, mûgnere, compagnía, Mascágna, stágno, sógno, Folígno, ognúno, piagnucoláre.

3. Pronounce the words in (a) under s on p. 3; then pronounce these words, in which the s has the sound of English z: basílico, bríndisi, cáso, cáusa, confusióne, desérto, desináre, elemôsina, ênfasi.

4. Pronounce these words, in which the z (or zz) is pronounced like ts: grázie, ôzio, Venêzia, Abrúzzi, altézza, Arézzo, mázzo, pôzzo, álzo, calzóni, ánzi, denúnzia, Firênze, Mónza, sênça, fôrza, márzo, zámpa, zío, zólfo; *then pronounce the words in (a) under z on p. 4.*

5. Pronounce: dêbbo, gabbáre, Lécco, pácco, addío, fréddo, affáre, gôffo, bêllo, Donatêllo, commêdia, sómma, fânno, Ravénna, appéna, trôppo, arrívo, têrra, éssa, Messína, métto, ôtto, avveníre.

LESSON 3. ARTICLES

Study 9, 10, 11, 12, 14, 15.

EXERCISE 3

1. State the gender and number of each of these combinations, as indicated by the form of the definite article: gli ábiti, il balcóne, i bambíni, la bárba, le immágini, gl' ímpeti, le scárpe, lo schérzo, gli zecchíni; cógli affári, del cámpo, súlla fáccia, ái lâdri, dállo scôglio, négli státi, délle unióni.

2. Place the proper form of the definite article before each of these nouns [those in (a) are masculine singular, those in (b) masculine plural, those in (c) feminine singular, those in (d) feminine plural]:
 (a) álbero, dênte, fátto, impêro, sguárdo, spédale, uccêllo, zíngaro.
 (b) álberi, dênti, fátti, impêri, sguárdi, spedáli, uccêlli, zíngari.
 (c) ária, campána, evoluzióne, ménte, ómbra, scêna, zampa.
 (d) árie, campáne, evoluzóni, ménti, ómbre, scêne, zampe.

3. Translate into Italian the prepositions and articles in these combinations [the nouns in (a) are masculine singular, those in (b) masculine plural, those in (c) feminine singular, those in (d) feminine plural]: (a) of the ánno, by the effêtto, to the gâtto, in the gêsto, with the ídolo, on the leóne, with the quâdro, in the scûdo, to the spírito, by the umôre, of the zappatóre. (b) of the ánni, by the effêtti, to the gátti, in the gêsti, with the ídoli, on the leóni, with the quâdri, in the scûdi, to the spíriti, by the umóri, of the zap-patóri. (c) of the ácqua, by the estáte, to the nôtte, in the ópera, with the scâla, on the távola. (d) of the ácque, by the estáti, to the nôtti, in the ôpere, with the scâle, on the távole.

4. Place the proper form of the indefinite article before each of these nouns [those in (a) are masculine, those in (b) are feminine]:
 (a) idílio, nóme, ocêano, spéccchio, strido, teátro, uôvo, zôccolo.
 (b) età, maêstra, ónda, spína, úva, válle.

LESSON 4. NOUNS

Study 17-25 inclusive [omitting (a), (b) under 22, and (a), (b), (c). (d) under 23].

EXERCISE 4

1. *State the gender and number of each of these combinations:* gli animáli, néi caffè, la canzóne, cólla féde, del fucíle, gl' ingégni, i lúpi, dágli onóri, le parôle, il poêta, súlle questióni, lo schérzo, állo schiôppo.

2. *Give the plural of each of these nouns [those in (a) are masculine, those in (b) are feminine]:* (a) bríndisi, cáne, castêllo, dêspota, dolóre, líbro, lúme, maêstro, padróne, perícolo, podestà, problêma, uômo. (b) bellézza, bontà, capitále, fónte, lúna, móglie, orígine, pólvere, sêrie, síntesi, têrra, vittôria.

3. *Give the plural of each of these combinations:* l' ácqua, l' artísta (*masculine*), l' ánno, l' azióne (*feminine*), la barbárie, la béstia, il búe, il cavállo, la chiáve, il cuôre, la dáma, il dóno, l' erróre (*m.*), l' êstasi (*f.*), l' età, la fanciúlla, la felicità, la fêsta, il fráte, la gênte, il giurì, la gravità, l' idêa, l' inchiôstro, l' istânte (*m.*), il lavóro, la líra, la máno, il máre, la metrôpoli, il minístro, la morále, délla nazióne, all' oggêtto, nell' opinióne (*f.*), délla padróna, dal palázzo, súlla pêlle, col prête, dal profêta, délla ragázza, al re, dal sânto, súllo scaffále, délla séte, nel sistêma, néllo státo, súlla superfície, dell' umóre (*m.*), nélla válle, sul vapóre, délla veritâ, cólla virtù.

LESSON 5. ÉSSERE

Study 53 (a) [omitting the compound tenses].

EXERCISE 5

1. *Identify (that is, state the person, number, and tense of) and translate these forms:* éranô, saréte, fúmmô, siámo, essêndo, sarébbé, sarémo, tu, séi, sarésté, êra, státo, sarà, siête, saremmô, éravate, saránno, sóno, foste, sarêbbero, fúrono.

2. Translate into Italian: we¹ are, he will be, they were (*past descriptive*), they were (*past absolute*), I should be, she is, we were (*desc.*), they would be, I was (*abs.*), we shall be, we should be, being, it was (*abs.*), they will be, thou art, you are,² thou wast (*desc.*), you were (*desc.*), thou wast (*abs.*), you were (*abs.*), you will be, you would be, to be, been, let us be, be.³

¹ English subject pronouns are to be omitted in translation, until other directions are given.

² English verbs which have 'you' as subject are to be translated by second person plural forms, until other directions are given.

³ English imperatives without an expressed subject are to be translated by second person plural forms, until other directions are given.

VOCABULARY

| | |
|----------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| giornále, m., <i>newspaper</i> . | ragázza, <i>girl</i> . |
| Giovánni, <i>John</i> . | Róma, <i>Rome</i> . |
| líbro, <i>book</i> . | scrivanía, <i>desk</i> . |
| pádre, m., <i>father</i> . | signóra, <i>lady</i> . |
| ragázzo, <i>boy</i> . | távola, <i>table</i> . |
| signóre, m., <i>gentleman</i> . | a, to, at, in. ¹ |
| uômo, <i>man</i> . | dománi, <i>tomorrow</i> . |
| cásá, <i>house, home</i> . | dóve, <i>where</i> . |
| città, <i>city</i> . | già, <i>already</i> . |
| dônya, <i>woman</i> . | iêri, <i>yesterday</i> . |
| Firênze, f., <i>Florence</i> . | lâ, <i>there</i> . |
| mádre, f., <i>mother</i> . | ôggi, <i>today</i> . |
| María, <i>Mary</i> . | óra, <i>now</i> . |
| Nápoli, f., <i>Naples</i> . | quândo, <i>when</i> . |
| pôrta, <i>door</i> . | qui, <i>here</i> . |

¹ English 'in' is ordinarily to be translated by *in*, but before the name of a city it is to be translated by *a*.

3. Study these sentences:¹ 1. Il signóre è il pádre di Giovánni. 2. Dóve siête óra? Sóno qui. 3. Quândo sarà cói signóri? 4. I líbri

¹ The student should enable himself to translate the sentences, to read them aloud in Italian accurately and intelligently, and to translate them without reference to the book when they are read aloud by the instructor.

déi ragazzi érano sulla tavola. 5. Dománi sarémo nella città. 6. Sarà qui ôggi? 7. La dônnna è già álla pôrta délla cásá. 8. Óra è qui: dománi dóve sarà? 9. Il giornále è là, sulla scrivanía. 10. Iéri le signóre érano a Nápoli, ôggi sóno a Rómá, dománi saránno a Firénze.

- 4. Translate into Italian:** 1. The lady is Mary's mother. 2. The girls will be here tomorrow. 3. The newspapers were on the tables. 4. Where are the boy's books? Are they on the desk? 5. I shall be there with the men. 6. Were you already at the door? 7. Would he be in the house now? 8. John's father is in the city. 9. When will you be in Naples? 10. Today they are here, tomorrow they'll be there.

¹ Use the past descriptive.

LESSON 6. ADJECTIVES

Study 26-34 inclusive. Learn the first twelve cardinal numerals, as given in 38.

EXERCISE 6

1. Give the feminine singular and the masculine and feminine plural of each of these adjectives: cattívo, fedéle, fôrte, róssio, sémplice, véro.

2. Insert the proper form of bêllo in each of these phrases: il — álbero, il — cappêllo, il — fanciúllo, il — ingégno, il — státo; i — álberi, i — cappêlli, i — fanciúlli, i — ingégni, i — státi.

3. Place the proper form of Sânto before each of these names: Agostíno, Cárlo, Élmo, Giovânni, Lorêndo.

4. Insert the proper form of grânde in each of these phrases: un — cappêllo, un — erróre, un — fuôco, un — ingégno, un — státo.

5. Insert the proper form of buônno in each of these phrases: un — amíco, un — cuôre, un — fanciúllo, un — ingégno, un — schiôppo.

VOCABULARY

| | |
|--|--|
| cêntro, <i>centre.</i> | francése, <i>French.</i> |
| fiôre, m., <i>flower.</i> | gentile, <i>gentle, polite, kind.</i> |
| fratêllo, <i>brother.</i> | giòvane, <i>young.</i> |
| giardíno, <i>garden.</i> | grânde, <i>great, large, big.</i> |
| têmpo, <i>time, weather.</i> | interessânte, <i>interesting.</i> |
| chiêsa, <i>church.</i> | italiâno, <i>Italian.</i> |
| leziône, f., <i>lesson.</i> | môlto, <i>much; as adverb,</i> <i>much, very.</i> |
| sorêlla, <i>sister.</i> | píccolo, <i>little, small.</i> |
| stânza, <i>room.</i> | pôvero, <i>poor.</i> |
| vía, <i>street.</i> | rôssو, <i>red.</i> |
| âltô, <i>high, tall.</i> | rotôndo, <i>round.</i> |
| bêllo, <i>beautiful, pretty, handsome,</i> <i>fine.</i> | ci, <i>here, there.¹</i> |
| fâcile, <i>easy.</i> | dôpo, <i>after, afterward.</i> |
| felice, <i>happy.</i> | fôrse, <i>perhaps.</i> |
| | non, ² <i>not.</i> |

¹ *Ci* is used when the ‘here’ or ‘there’ is quite unemphatic, *qui* and *là* when the ‘here’ or ‘there’ bears some emphasis. *Ci* is called a conjunctive adverb, and its position is governed by special rules. Until other directions are given, it should be placed directly before the verb.

² Placed before the verb.

6. *Study these sentences:*¹ 1. Ci sóno déi bêi fióri nel píccolo giardíno. 2. Per i pôveri non è fâcile êssere felíci. 3. La távola rotônda êra nel cêntro délla stânza. 4. C’ è quâlche giornâle francése súlla scrivanía. 5. Le víe di Nápoli sóno môlto interessânti. 6. Óggi siête più felice che iêri. 7. Le tre signôre francési êrano môlto gentili. 8. La chiêsa è più âltâ délla cásâ. 9. Il ragâzzo più giòvane è il fratêllo di María. 10. Domâni fôrse il têmpo sarà migliore.

¹ See the statement on p. 155.

7. *Translate into Italian:*¹ 1. The big red book is for John’s brother. 2. He is the happiest of the boys. 3. The lesson for tomorrow will

¹ See the statement on p. 171.

be very easy. 4. The Italian newspaper was¹ on the round table. 5. The largest house is as high as the church. 6. Mary's four sisters will not be here after tomorrow. 7. The boys were¹ more polite when they were younger. 8. Yesterday the weather was fine. 9. The prettiest flowers are in the garden. 10. There are some interesting streets in the centre of the city.²

ci sono delle vie

interessanti nel centro della città.

Use the past descriptive.

² Write this sentence in two ways, first using the partitive construction, then using *qualche*.

LESSON 7. AVÉRE

Study 53 (b) [omitting the compound tenses].

EXERCISE 7

1. Identify and translate: avéste, hánno, avréste, avrémo, êbbi, avévi, avêndo, avrà, avúto, avrêbbero, avévano, avréte, abbiámo, êbbero, hái, avráanno.

2. Translate into Italian: they will have, she had (*past abs.*), we should have, I had (*past desc.*), having, we have, thou wilt have, they have, let us have, you will have, we had (*abs.*), I should have.

3. Translate: fúrono, ha, fóste, aveváte, sarà, avéte, essêndo, êbbe, siáte, avrémmo, saréi, avémmo, saréste, avéva.

4. Translate into Italian: I am, I have, you are, you have, he is, he has, we were (*desc.*), we had (*desc.*), they were (*desc.*), they had (*desc.*), I was (*abs.*), I had (*abs.*), you were (*abs.*), you had (*abs.*), he was (*abs.*), he had (*abs.*), we shall be, we shall have, they would be, they would have.

VOCABULARY

álbero, tree.

áynno, year.

giórno, day.

invérno, winter.

mése, m., month.

pránzo, dinner.

quádro, picture.

salôtto, parlor.

sóle, m., sun, sunlight.

teátro, theatre.

| | |
|-------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| <i>matita, pencil.</i> | <i>scúro, dark.</i> |
| <i>paziēnza, patience.</i> | <i>stréutto, narrow.</i> |
| <i>pénna, pen.</i> | <i>véro, true.</i> |
| <i>rôsa, rose.</i> | |
| <i>settimâna, week.</i> | <i>benchè, although.¹</i> |
| <i>stôria, history.</i> | <i>e, and.</i> |
| <i>câldo, hot, warm.</i> | <i>ma, but.</i> |
| <i>fréddo, cold.</i> | <i>o, or.</i> |
| <i>importânte, important.</i> | <i>pôi, then.</i> |
| <i>nuôvo, new.</i> | <i>prêsto, soon, early.</i> |
| <i>piêno, full.</i> | <i>sêmpre, always.</i> |
| | <i>soltânto, only.</i> |

¹ The verb of the clause introduced by *benchè* is always in the subjunctive.

5. *Study these sentences:* 1. Avránnio soltânto tre o quâtro giórni a Firênze. 2. La chiêsa più interessânte êra in úna vía stréttta e scúra. 3. Il giòvane avéva sêmpre qualche libro italiáno súlla scrivanía. 4. Benchè le stânze non síano grândi, sóno cálde e piêne di sóle. 5. Abbiámo per domâni délle leziôni móltô fâcili. 6. Non ho úna pénna, ma Giovânni ha délle matíte. 7. Dópo pránzo le signôre sarêbbero nel salôtto. 8. Pôi avrà délle távole nuôve. 9. Il libro è úna stôria importânte déi téátri di Nápoli. 10. Óggi avrò déi giornâli francési e italiáni.

metto più al te

6. *Translate into Italian:* 1. The trees are much higher than the houses. 2. A year has twelve months, a month has four weeks, and a week has seven days. 3. They have a large house with a beautiful garden. 4. Have patience, they will be here soon. 5. Although the room is small, it will not be cold in the winter. 6. The most beautiful flowers were large red roses. 7. He had ten books on the desk, and seven or eight on the round table. 8. Have you a pen or a good pencil? 9. It is a pretty theatre, it's true, but it isn't very large. 10. The churches of the city were very beautiful; they had many interesting pictures.

LESSON 8. DEMONSTRATIVES AND INTERROGATIVES

Study 42, 43.

EXERCISE 8

1. Place the proper form of *quéllō* before each of these nouns: álbero, cappêllo, fanciúllo, ingérgno, státo, uccêllo; álberi, cappêlli, fanciúlli, ingégni, státi, uccêlli.

2. Translate into Italian: who is it? whom have you there? of whom are-you-speaking (*parlátē*)? what is it? what have you? of what are you speaking? what book is that? which book is that? whose book is that? what a beautiful book!

VOCABULARY

| | |
|--|---------------------------------------|
| bigliéttō , ticket. | cêrto , certain. |
| cappêllo , hat. | côrto , short. |
| denáro , money. | diffícile , difficult. |
| fanciúllo , child. | fortunâto , fortunate. |
| lavôro , work. | necessário , necessary. |
| número , number. | ógni , ² every. |
| occhiáli , m. pl., glasses. | possíble , possible. |
| studênte , m., student. | prônto , ready. |
| fôglia , leaf. | vérde , green. |
| gítâ , trip, excursion. | côme , as, like. |
| mâno , f., hand. | finalmênte , finally, at last. |
| mattína , morning. | lunedì , Monday. |
| Milâno , f. ¹ Milan. | se , if. ³ |
| poesía , poem, poetry. | sì , yes. |
| Venêzia , Venice. | trôppo , too, too much. |

¹ Names of cities are regarded as feminine, whatever the ending.

² Invariable.

³ The verb of the clause introduced by *se* is present *indicative* if the tense is present, past *subjunctive* if the tense is past.

3. Study these sentences: 1. Quéstē fôglie sóno piû bêlle di quélli fióri. 2. Ho déi giornáli e déi lîbri: quéstí sóno per le signôré, quélli

per i signóri. 3. Ciò è possibile, ma non è certo. 4. Chi ha un pádre cóme quéllo è móltó fortunáto. 5. Chi è? È quéllo studénte francesé. 6. Che cosa avéte in quéllo máno? Déi bigliétti per una gíta a Venézia. 7. Quálé è il número délla cása di quel signóre? 8. Quálé lezíone éra la piú diffíclle? 9. Quánti quádri in quel salótto! 10. Di chi è quel cappélio vérdé?

4. Translate into Italian: 1. What handsome children! Who are they? 2. Those poems are shorter than this one. 3. How much money would he have then? 4. At last he has what is necessary for the work. 5. These boys are here every morning. 6. Are you ready? Have you those tickets? 7. Which churches are more interesting, those of Venice or those of Milan? 8. That red is pretty. Yes, if it isn't too dark for the room. 9. How many will be here Monday? More than ten or twelve? 10. Whose glasses are these? Are they John's?

LESSON 9. THE FIRST CONJUGATION

Study 58, 59 [omitting (a), (b)], 62, 63 [omitting (a)–(d)], the first sentence of 75, and the first sentence of 77 (a).

EXERCISE 9

1. Identify and translate: parlò, parleréte, párli, parláste, parláte, parlíamo, parleréi, parlerái, párlino, parlerà, parlái, parlávano.

2. Translate into Italian: I spoke, she would speak, we were speaking, I shall speak, they spoke, speak, let us speak, let him speak, speaking, they speak, we should speak, he spoke.

VOCABULARY

| | |
|--|---|
| baúle , m., <i>trunk</i> . | panière , m., <i>basket</i> . |
| esáme , m., <i>examination</i> . | poêta , m., <i>poet</i> . |
| forestière , m., <i>foreigner</i> . | |
| guánto , <i>glove</i> . | chiáve , f., <i>key</i> . |
| moménto , <i>moment</i> . | gallería , <i>gallery</i> . |
| palázzo , <i>palace</i> . | stazióne , f., <i>station</i> . |
| páne , m., <i>bread</i> . | universitâ , <i>university</i> . |

| | |
|--|--|
| <i>amare</i> , to love. | <i>guardare</i> , to look, look at, watch. |
| <i>aspettare</i> , to wait, wait for. | <i>lavorare</i> , to work. |
| <i>cantare</i> , to sing. | <i>passare</i> , to pass. |
| <i>comprare</i> , to buy. | <i>telefonare</i> , to telephone. |
| <i>costare</i> , to cost. | <i>tornare</i> , to come back, return. |
| <i>desiderare</i> , to desire. | <i>trovare</i> , to find. |
| <i>entrare</i> , to enter, go in, come in. | <i>visitare</i> , to visit. |

3. *Translate*: compriámo, costerébbe, entráva, tornerà, desideráte, trováste, entraránno, amerébbbero, tórnai, trováto, trováti, comprámmo, guárda, guardái, amárono, trovándo, telefonò, lavoreréste, aspêttano, cántino.

4. *Translate into Italian*: it will cost, I waited, buying, they would watch, she came in, they returned, I should telephone, he loved, sing, we found, let him work.

5. *Study these sentences*: 1. Comprerò un baúle, se non côsta trôppo. 2. Quândo ci entrámmo, guardávano quel bêl quâdro dégli álberi. 3. Quânto côstano quéstí guânti? 4. Se non lavorásse, non passerébbe gli esâmi. 5. Parlava delle poesie di quel poëta francése. 6. Lunedì visitâmmo l' università di Nápoli. 7. Che côsa cantâvano quéi ragâzzi nellâ vía? 8. Aspêtti un moménto: non sóno prônto. 9. Non entrò nel palazzo, benchè avésse le chiâvi. 10. Chi più ha, più desídera.

6. *Translate into Italian*: 1. Look at¹ that girl with the basket full of roses. 2. They were waiting for that foreigner. 3. You will find some² interesting pictures in that gallery. 4. Did you telephone to that French gentleman? 5. With whom did you come back from the station? 6. I went in, although he was working. 7. Let's wait for¹ John: he will be here soon. 8. Let him buy the bread, and then come back. 9. Where did she find those keys? 10. If I find the money, I'll telephone.

¹ Do not use a preposition after an Italian verb which may be in itself equivalent to an English verb and preposition.

² Use *qualche*.

LESSON 10. RELATIVES AND POSSESSIVES

Study 44 [omitting (a), (b), (c)], 45 [omitting (a)–(e)], 59 (a). Read 44 (a), (b), (c) 59 (b), 63 (a), (b), (c).

EXERCISE 10

1. Insert the proper relative pronoun in each of these phrases: il ragazzo — è qui, i libri — trovai, i ragazzi con — tornai, il libro di — parlo, i libri — sono sulla tavola, il ragazzo — cercavamo.

2. Translate into Italian: my garden, his house, our books, your pencils, their garden, my house, her books, our pencils, your garden, their house, my books, his pencils, our garden, your house, their books.

VOCABULARY

cugino, cousin.

mercato, market.

ombrêllo, umbrella.

pittore, m., painter.

romanzo, novel.

finêstra, window.

fotografía, photograph.

mela, apple.

péra, pear.

têsta, head.

giállo, yellow.

modérno, modern.

tutto, all.

último, last, latest.

arrivâre, to arrive.

bisognâre,¹ to be necessary.

cercâre, to seek, search, look for, try.

cominciâre, to begin.

mangiâre, to eat.

menâre, to lead, take.

pagâre, to pay.

portâre, to carry, bring.

studiâre, to study.

bêne, well.

êcco, here is, here are, there is, there are.²

perchè, why, because.

stamâne, this morning.

sûbito, at once.

¹ Impersonal.

² When ‘there is,’ ‘there are,’ are quite unemphatic (as in ‘There are some pretty flowers in the garden’), or when the ‘is’ or ‘are’ is emphatic (as in ‘There are men who don’t believe it’), they are to be translated by *c’ è* or *ci sono*. When the ‘there’ is emphatic (as in ‘There is John’) they are to be translated by *êcco*. ‘Here is,’ ‘here are,’ are always to be translated by *êcco*. *C’ è* and *ci sono* correspond to the French *il y a*; *êcco* to the French *voici* and *voilà*.

3. Give all the forms of pagare in which an h is inserted.

4. Translate into Italian: I search, we search, let him search, I shall search; I pay, we pay, let him pay, I shall pay; I begin, we begin, let him begin, I shall begin; I eat, we eat, let him eat, I shall eat; I study, we study, let him study, I shall study.

5. Study these sentences: 1. È un uomo che trova subito quel che cerca. 2. C'erano all'ultima finestra due signori, uno dei quali era quel forestiere con cui parlai ieri. 3. Il palazzo che ~~visitammo~~^{abbiamo visitato} stamane è uno dei più interessanti della città. 4. La loro sorella portava sulla testa un gran paniere giallo pieno di mele e di pera. 5. Mangeremo quel che troveremo, e pagheremo bene. 6. Il quadro che guardavano nel salotto è di uno dei nostri migliori pittori italiani moderni. 7. Ecco quel signore. Perchè desidera parlare al vostri fratelli? 8. Che bei fiori! Sono tutti del vostro giardino? 9. La via più stretta è quella che mena dalla chiesa di San Giovanni al mercato. 10. Bisognava aspettare Maria, che cercava l'ombrello.

6. Translate into Italian: 1. Who is the tall gentleman who arrived this morning? 2. Which of the lessons that you studied yesterday is the easiest? 3. This novel is more interesting than the one that he brought from the city. 4. My glasses are larger and rounder than his. 5. What are you looking for? Those tickets that I bought this morning. 6. Here is the umbrella I found at the door the day that you were here. Is it yours? 7. Whose is that poem of which they were speaking? 8. There are the men they were waiting for: why don't they begin? 9. Which of those three trunks is yours? This one, the largest. 10. Here is what he brought, — what is it? It's the latest photograph of my cousin.

LESSON 11. THE SECOND AND THIRD CONJUGATIONS

Study 60.

EXERCISE 11

1. Identify and translate: credè, crederéte, créda, crederò, credéste, credéte, credétti, credíamo, crederéi, credétero, crederái, credéi, crederà, credévano, crederémo.

2. *Translate into Italian:* I believed, she would believe, we were believing, believe, they believed, let us believe, let him believe, believing, they believe, we should believe, he believed, you believe.

VOCABULARY

| | |
|--|--|
| bottone , m., <i>button</i> . | godére , <i>to enjoy</i> . |
| caffè , m., <i>coffee</i> . | temére , <i>to fear, be afraid</i> . |
| fêrro , <i>iron</i> . | |
| lúme , m., <i>light</i> . | bâtttere , <i>to beat, strike</i> . |
| onôre , m., <i>honor</i> . | cêdere , <i>to yield</i> . |
| servitôre , m., <i>servant</i> . | combâtttere , <i>to fight</i> . |
| battâglia , <i>battle</i> . | crédere , <i>to believe, think</i> . |
| côsa , <i>thing</i> . | pêrdere , <i>to lose</i> . |
| fráse , f., <i>sentence</i> . | prêmere , <i>to press</i> . |
| preghiêra , <i>prayer, entreaty</i> . | ricévere , <i>to receive, get</i> . |
| salûte , f., <i>health</i> . | ripêtere , <i>to repeat</i> . |
| tôrre , f., <i>tower</i> . | ancôra , <i>yet, still, again, even</i> . |
| villa , <i>villa</i> . | che , <i>conjunction, that</i> . |
| vista , <i>sight, view</i> . | fuorchè , <i>except</i> . |
| víta , <i>life</i> . | mêglio , <i>better</i> . |
| vôlta , <i>time.¹</i> | mémentre , <i>while</i> . |

¹ ¹ ‘Time’ is ordinarily to be translated by *tempo*; but when it has the sense of ‘occasion’ (as in ‘three or four times’) it is to be translated by *vôlta*.

3. *Translate:* battiâmo, teméva, perderà, godéte, ricevéi, cedêtero, combattè, premêndo, ripêta, cederêbbe, ricevêste, goderârno, perderêbbero, témano, perdûto, perdûti, temémmo, combâtte, perdérono, ricévono.

4. *Translate into Italian:* he will lose, I enjoyed, fearing, they would beat, she received, let them yield, they fought, repeat, they are pressing.

5. *Study these sentences:* 1. Oggi è felice: riceverà il denáro per quel quâdro délla signóra cói guánti. 2. Benchè combattéssero bêne, perdêttero la battâglia, e mólti perdêttero la víta. 3. Avrémo quel che bisógna, non teméte. 4. Non ho ricevûto ancôra le míe fotografie.

5. Ripetévano ancora quel che avévano già ripetuto mólte vòlte. 6. Non ho studiáto la lezióne: iéri perdéi i miéi líbri. 7. Se non tornásse, perderébbe ógni côsa. 8. Credéva che fósse mèglio èssere temúto che amáto. 9. Tútto è perdúto fuorchè l' onóre. 10. Bisórgna báttere il fêrro méntre è cáldo.

6. *Translate into Italian:* 1. She pressed a button, and the servant came in with the coffee. 2. The students had to (*a*) repeat the sentence three or four times. 3. The trees were losing the last red and yellow leaves. 4. If I receive the money, I'll telephone at once to my father. 5. Finally she came back and repeated that *ária* from the *Trovatôre* (*m.*). 6. Although she is still young, she does not enjoy good health. 7. That room has only one small window, but it gets light from the parlor. 8. From their villa they enjoy a beautiful view of the towers of the city. 9. If he doesn't yield to their entreaties, he won't yield to mine. 10. They think that he is¹ even poorer than his cousin.

¹ Use the subjunctive.

LESSON 12. CONJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS

*Study 46, 47 [omitting 3 and (*a*)], 48 [omitting (*a*), (*b*), (*d*), (*e*), and (*f*), but including (*c*)].*

EXERCISE 12

1. *Translate into Italian:* he finds me, he finds thee, he finds him, he finds her, he finds it (*m.*), he finds it (*f.*), he finds us, he finds you, he finds them (*m.*), he finds them (*f.*); I find myself, thou findest thyself, he finds himself, she finds herself, we find ourselves, you find yourself, you find yourselves, they (*m.*) find themselves, they (*f.*) find themselves; we find each other, you find each other, they find each other; to find him, finding him, let us find him, find him, do not find him, finding himself.

2. *Translate into Italian:* he speaks to me, he speaks to thee, he speaks to him, he speaks to her, he speaks to us, he speaks to you, he speaks to them (*m.*), he speaks to them (*f.*); I speak to myself, thou

speakest to thyself, he speaks to himself, she speaks to herself, we speak to ourselves, you speak to yourself, you speak to yourselves, they (*m.*) speak to themselves, they (*f.*) speak to themselves; we speak to each other, you speak to each other, they speak to each other; to speak to him, speaking to him, let us speak to him, let's not speak to him, speak to him, speaking to himself.

3. Translate: lo trováí, le párlano, mi parlerêbbe, ripetétele, vi aspettâvano, li comprâste?, cediâmo lóro, la guardâvano?, gli telefonerò, si trovò, lo perdémmo, cercátela, le ricevérano, lo perdêtte, trovárvi, ci visiteránno, ci visiterémo, temêndoli, non le parláte, ci cêda, vi telefonò, studiámolo, si cércano, comprátolo, li portáte.

4. Study these sentences: 1. Se non mi trováte qui, aspettâtemi coí bigliétti álla pôrta délla stazióne. 2. Che côsa cércâ? Le chiávi di quel baúle. Le trovò iêri, poi le perdêtte ancóra. 3. Si ripetévano le frási délla lezióne. 4. Che ragázzo! Compráre cíngue méle, e mangiárle súbito! 5. Quânto gli costerêbbe un cappêllo cóme quéllo? 6. Parláva cóme se ci fósse státo. 7. Quândo riceverò il denáro, vi pagherò. 8. Di che côsa le parláva nel salôtto? 9. Dóve ci ména? Álla chiêsa di cui vi parlò quel pittóre. 10. Ecco quell' ombrêllo: teméva che lo avésse perdûto.

5. Translate into Italian: 1. When he came back from the market, he brought me some¹ apples. 2. When will she begin to (*a*) sing to them? 3. If you study the lesson, you will find it easy. 4. If he had them, he would bring them to my father. 5. When they came in, he was beginning to (*a*) eat it. 6. Here are the books I lost yesterday. Who found them? 7. We were here this morning, but she did not receive us. 8. I waited for them three days in Naples. 9. Now that you have it again, don't lose it. 10. Whose photograph is this? It's of my cousin. I received it yesterday.

¹ Use the partitive construction.

LESSON 13. CONJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS (continued)

Study 46–50 inclusive.

EXERCISE 13

1. *Translate each of these phrases in two ways:* gliélo pôrto, gliéla pôrto, gliéli pôrto, gliéle pôrto, gliéne párla, portáteglielo, parlátegliene.

2. *Translate into Italian:* he leads him to me, he leads him to thee, he leads him to him, he leads him to her, he leads him to us, he leads him to you, he leads him to them; he leads her to me, he leads her to thee, he leads her to him, he leads her to her, he leads her to us, he leads her to you, he leads her to them; he leads them (*m.*) to me, he leads them to thee, he leads them to him, he leads them to her, he leads them to us, he leads them to you, he leads them to them; he leads them (*f.*) to me, he leads them to thee, he leads them to him, he leads them to her, he leads them to us, he leads them to you, he leads them to them.

3. *Translate into Italian:* he speaks of it to me, he speaks of it to thee, he speaks of it to him, he speaks of it to her, he speaks of it to us, he speaks of it to you, he speaks of it to them.

4. *Translate into Italian:* I repeat it to myself, thou repeatest it to thyself, he repeats it to himself, she repeats it to herself, we repeat it to ourselves, you repeat it to yourself, you repeat it to yourselves, they repeat it to themselves; we repeat it to each other, you repeat it to each other, they repeat it to each other.

VOCABULARY

automôbile, m., *automobile.*

complimênto, *compliment.*

ritárdo, *delay; in ritárdo, late.*

trêno, *train.*

cortesía, *courtesy.*

lira, *lira, coin worth about 20 cents.*

nôtte, f., *night.*

occasióne, f., *occasion.*

ôra, *hour.*

âltro, *other.*

stêssø, *same.*

vénti, *twenty.*

| | |
|---|--|
| chiámáre , to call; còme si chiáma? | mostráre, to show. |
| what is the name of? | presentáre, to present. |
| domandáre , to ask. ¹ | prestáre, to lend. |
| incontráre , to meet. | raccontáre, to narrate, tell, tell about. ¹ |
| insegnáre , to teach. | |
| lasciáre , to leave, let. ² | ringraziáre, to thank. |
| mandáre , to send. | spiegáre, to explain. |

¹ The personal object of *domandáre* or *raccontáre* is indirect: *gli domandái*, 'I asked him'; *le raccontái*, 'I told her.'

² *Lasciáre* is to be used in translating 'let' only when the idea is one of permission rather than one of command. For example, if 'let him speak' really means 'I command that he speak,' it is to be translated *pálli*; if it really means 'allow him to speak,' it is to be translated *lasciátelo parláre*.

5. Translate: vi aspétto, ne cercáva, ce lo cantárono, ne parláste, non ne avrèbbe, éccoli, portándoglielo, ripetéteglielo, gliéne parlerò, bisórgna portárglielo, éccola, ce li cedétté, portiámogliene, me le mandò?, gliélo prestái, ve lo spiegheránno, mandátemeli, gliélo préstino, mi si presénta, gli si preséntano, se lo preséntano, lo mostrái lóro, ve ne mandárono?, me lo spiéghi, gliélo presteréte?

6. Study these sentences: 1. Quell' ombrélló éra il suo, e stamáne gliélo mandái. 2. Se non credésse quel che gli raccontámmo, non gliélo ripeterébbe. 3. Cominciáva a domandárgli perchè ne avésse parláto ágli áltri. 4. Ve lo spiegherà quándo gli si presenterà úna buôna occasióne. 5. Lo ringraziái délla cortesía, e gli raccontái tútto. 6. Ógni vólta che s' incóntrano, si ripétono gli stéssi compliménti. 7. Cóme si chiáma quel gióvane che v' inségná il francése? 8. Il tréno éra in ritárdo, e l' aspettárono un' óra e più. 9. Óra lasciáteli studiáre; parlerémo dópo. 10. Ho a pagáre súbito, e non ho úna líra: Giovánni ha ricevúto oggi vénti líre, non è vero?¹ Me ne presterébbe diéci?

¹ non è vero? 'hasn't he?'

7. Translate into Italian: 1. He is in the garden. Call him — they are looking for him. 2. He presented himself to me yesterday. I believe him even younger than the others. 3. Where are my pencils? didn't I leave them on the desk? 4. If he loses it, it will

perdérse. Se lo perderà

bisognare *guardarla fin giorni*
cost him) twenty lire. 5. It is necessary to watch them day and
 night. 6. He has a French automobile, and he'll show it to us
 Monday. 7. Whose tickets are those? Are they your cousin's?
 Why don't you send them to him? 8. If I didn't believe what she
 told me, I wouldn't repeat it to you. 9. If he receives that money,
 he will pay me at once. 10. If she finds this lesson too difficult, he
 will explain it to her tomorrow.

¹ No preposition is used between *bisognare* and a dependent infinitive.

LESSON 14. THE FOURTH CONJUGATION

Study 61.

EXERCISE 14

1. Identify and translate: finì, finiréte, finíscono, finirò, finíste, finívano, finíi, finiránnno, finiréi, finísci, finírono, finirái, finíte, finirémo, finísca, finívoo.

2. Translate into Italian: I finished, she would finish, we were finishing, he is finishing, finish, they finished, let us finish, finishing, they finish, we should finish, he finished, you finish, let him finish.

VOCABULARY

autúnno, *autumn*.

colore, m., *color*.

pericolo, *danger*.

spedale, m., *hospital*.

vento, *wind*.

vestito, *dress*.

cúra, *care*.

stóffa, *stuff, goods*.

cattivo, *bad*.

chiáro, *clear, bright*.

tánto, *so much*.¹

applaudíre, *to applaud*.

avvertíre, *to warn*.

capíre, *to understand*.

divertíre, *to amuse*.

dormíre, *to sleep*.

feríre, *to wound*.

fuggíre, *to flee*.

garantíre, *to guarantee*.

partíre, *to depart, leave*.²

preferíre, *to prefer*.

restituíre, *to give back*.

sentíre, *to feel, hear*.

servíre, *to serve*.

¹ 'So much' is to be translated by *tánto*; not by the separate words for 'so' and 'much.'

² When 'leave' is transitive, it is to be translated by *lasciare*; when intransitive, by *partire*.

alméno, at least.

invéce, instead.

nondiméno, nevertheless.

prima di, before.

sênsa, without.

stanôtte, last night.

staséra, this evening.

súbito che, as soon as.¹

1. 'As soon as' is to be translated by *súbito che*; not by the separate words for 'as' and 'soon.'

3. Give the present indicative of each of these verbs: capíre, divertíre, dormíre, fuggíre, garantíre, preferíre.

4. Translate: dormiámó, capirébbe, servíva, avvertirà, applaudíte, garantíscono, divérte, fuggírono, ferísce, servêndo, preferímmo, fuggíi, avvertító, feríte, preferirébbero, divértono, sentíste, serviránnó, sênta, capíscono.

5. Translate into Italian: he will amuse, I was sleeping, fleeing, they prefer, we understood, she served, they will applaud, you fled, I should guarantee, sleep.

6. Study these sentences: 1. Súbito che me ne parlò, capíi che l' avéva perdúto. 2. Se ci sérve bêne, le pagherémo vénti líre la settimána. 3. Gliélo restituiránno súbito che tórna. 4. L' avvertíi che c' éra perícolo, ma partì nondiméno. 5. Se si divértono óra invéce di lavoráre, dománi avránno a lavoráre invéce di divertírsi. 6. Avéva cantátó móltó bêne, e tútti l' applaudívano. 7. Che vênto stanôtte! Lo sentíste? Sì, non dormíi un' óra in tútta la nôtte. 8. Il feríto fu portátó állo spedále. 9. Partírono sênsa ringraziárci, benchè avéssimo cercáto tánto di divertírlì. 10. Il mése cominciò con úna settimána di bêl têmpo — giórni chiári e cálidi — ma finì con diêci giórni fréddi e scúri.

7. Translate into Italian: 1. If he doesn't guarantee it for a year at least, we won't buy it. 2. Although he heard them speak, he fled like the wind. 3. I explained it to him with much care, but he doesn't understand it yet. 4. If he is still sleeping, he won't finish that lesson. 5. The trees are losing the last leaves: the autumn is ending, and the winter is beginning. 6. Did you hear what he told them? 7. This room is warm, but in the parlor we felt the cold. 8. We shall leave this evening if the weather isn't

too bad. 9. What goods and what color does she prefer for the dress? 10. When will you finish that work? I shall not have the time to (*di*) finish it before Monday.

LESSON 15. DISJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS

Study 51.

EXERCISE 15

1. Translate into Italian, expressing the subject pronouns (use *luí*, *lêi*, and *lóro* for the third person): I am, thou hast, he speaks, she fears, we finish, you feel, they are, I had, thou didst enter, he yielded, she understood, we slept, you were, they had, I shall pay, thou wilt receive, he will guarantee, she will depart, we shall be, you will have, they will enter.

VOCABULARY

| | |
|-----------------------------------|--|
| avvocáto, <i>lawyer.</i> | accánto a, <i>beside.</i> |
| bicchiére, m., <i>glass.</i> | cóntro, cóntro di, ¹ <i>against.</i> |
| facchíno, <i>porter.</i> | davánti a, <i>in front of.</i> |
| látte, m., <i>milk.</i> | diétero, diétero a, ¹ <i>behind.</i> |
| mêzzogiórno, <i>noon.</i> | secóndo, <i>according to.</i> |
| ária, <i>air.</i> | avánti, <i>forward; come in.</i> ² |
| lêttera, <i>letter.</i> | così, <i>so.</i> |
| libertà, <i>liberty, freedom.</i> | êh, <i>eh.</i> |
| môglie, f., <i>wife.</i> | mái, <i>ever, never; non . . .</i> mái, ³ <i>never.</i> |
| sêggiola, <i>chair.</i> | nemméno, <i>non . . . nemméno,</i> ³ <i>not even.</i> |
| valígia, <i>valise, bag.</i> | perfêttaménte, <i>perfectly.</i> |
| aiutáre, <i>to help.</i> | príma, <i>first.</i> |
| restáre, <i>to stay.</i> | |

¹ The compound form is used before a disjunctive pronoun, the simple form in other cases.

² As an exclamation.

³ When *mái* (meaning 'never') or *nemméno* follows the verb, *non* is placed before the verb.

2. Study these sentences: 1. Portáte a quéstò signóre un caffè, e a me un bicchiére di látte. 2. Se lóro ce l' hánno raccontáto a noi, perchè non gliélo racconterémmo noi a lúi? 3. Felíci vói, che godéte quell' ária e quélla libertà, méntre io rěsto qui in città a lavoráre cóme un facchín! 4. Chi è? Sóno io. Chi, io? Io, Giovánni. Siête vói, êh? avánti. 5. Se non gliélo spiéga bêne, gli è che non lo capísce bêne nemménó lúi. 6. A quel teátro me non mi ci troveréte mái più. 7. Pôrta sêmpre con sè úna valígia tútta piêna di líbri, ma pôi non ne guárda nemménó úno. 8. Lúi le parláva cóntra di me — e io avévo lavoráto tânto per lúi! 9. Quândo entrái, lêi êra qui; accânto a lêi, Giovánni, che le parláva di sè stéssso, cóme sêmpre; e davânti a lúi, in quésta sêggiola, la píccola sorêlla di lêi, che guardáva óra l' úno óra l' áltra. 10. Quândo lo perdéi, lóro mi aiutárono a cercárlo.

3. Translate into Italian: 1. They spoke of it to us, to you, and to him. 2. If it's he, call him, and show him that letter. 3. I myself telephoned to you, and asked you if he would arrive there before noon. 4. I think that you will receive it tomorrow. 5. If *you* were here with them, they would be perfectly happy. 6. If he stays, they will leave. 7. He was speaking to us, but we thought that he was speaking to them. 8. He and his cousin left before us, but we arrived there an hour before them. 9. According to him, she was staying at home because the weather was so bad. 10. The lawyer's wife came in first; then, behind her, the two girls; behind them, three porters with the trunks; and finally the lawyer himself.

LESSON 16. COMPOUND TENSES

Study the compound tenses in 53 (a) and 53 (b), 54 [omitting (c)–(h)], 55, 56, and the second sentence in 75.

EXERCISE 16

1. Identify and translate: ho trováto, avéva trováto, êbbe trováto, avrémo trováto, avréste trováto; sóno trováto, êra trováto, fu trováto, sarémo trováti, sarêbbero trováti; sóno státo trováto, êra státo trováto, sarémo státi trováti, saréste státo trováto; sóno tornáto, êra

tornáto, fu tornáto, sarémo tornáti, saréste tornáti; mi sóno divertíto, si éra divertíto, ci sarémo divertíti, si sarêbbero divertíti.

2. *Translate each of these phrases in six ways (as true reflexive, masculine and feminine; as substitute for the passive, masculine, feminine, and neuter; and as indefinite):* si presénta, si trôva, si servì, si perderà.

3. *Translate each of these phrases in three ways: (as true reflexive, as reciprocal, and as substitute for the passive):* si capíscono, si chiámano, si trovárono.

4. *Translate:* l' hánno avúto, c' éra státo, l' avrò cominciáto, mi avrèbbe telefonáto, siête ferító, vi siête ferító, vi fúrono trováti, gli saránno restituítí, gli si restituiránno, sarémmo presentáti lóro, gli è spiegáto, gli si spiéga, gli è státo spiegáto, gli si è spiegáto, ci siámo spiegáti, ce lo siámo spiegáti, si êrano incontráti, siámo arriváti, vi fu mostráto, gli si presenterà, le éra státo raccontáto, le si éra raccontáto, si è presentáta, si sóno presentáte, li avrèbbe aspettáti, ci ha capító, ci avévano ringraziáti, si éra perdúto, êrano fuggíti, si è ferító, vi sóno arriváti, ci êrano státi mandáti, ci si êrano mandáti, vi avéva aiutáto, essêndo temúto, ci si spiéga, gliélo avévano raccontáto, vi avrémmo ringraziáto.

5. *Translate into Italian:* we have found you, we have been there, they had had it, he will have eaten it, we should have sent it to you, he had¹ arrived, they are received,² they would have presented themselves to us, you would have found each other, they had¹ come in, he had left them, they would have¹ fled, it has been told to me.²

¹ Translate by the proper form of *essere*.

² Translate this phrase in two ways.

6. *Study these sentences:* 1. Sóno cértó che se ci fósse státo cógli altri, ce ne avrèbbe parláto. 2. Perchè non ha cominciáto a cercáre quel che perdétté? 3. Quândo lóro saránno tornáti, nósí sarémo già partíti. 4. Non li avrà finíti prima di dománi. 5. Non ha mái visitáto quel giardíno? Gliéne abbiámo parláto tânte vólte. 6. Le sêggiole che mi si mostrávano êrano móltó bêlle, e le avrèi compráte se avéssi avúto il denáro. 7. Mi si éra raccontáto che lúi ci fósse státo, ma non l' avévo credúto. 8. Se hánno ricevúto la súa

l'ettera, saranno già partiti per la città. 9. Lui aveva temuto che cedessero alle nostre preghiere. 10. Si mangia a mezzogiorno, e un' ora dopo si torna al lavoro.

7. *Translate into Italian:* 1. If he had had any, he would have sent us some. 2. Being called, I entered, and found myself where I had been the day before. 3. That bag that he had lost has been given back to him. 4. Let him explain to her why they hadn't telephoned to her. 5. I would have sent it to you if I had found it. 6. As soon as he had called them, he came back into the house. 7. When I arrived, they had¹ already left. 8. If they had begun them, they would have finished two or three of them. 9. He told me that he had¹ arrived there before the others. 10. I should have preferred a room with at least two windows.

¹ Translate by the proper form of *essere*.

LESSON 17. REVIEW

EXERCISE 17

1. *Pronounce Exercise A on p. 150.*

2. *Give the plural of each of these combinations:* all' avvocato gentile, che bel salotto!, col loro fratello, dalla sua bella mano, dell' uomo felice, il gran baule, il mio cugino, il poeta francese, il suo bell' ombrello, la città moderna, la giovane moglie, l'altra finestra, lo stesso ragazzo, nell'università nuova, quale stanza?, quel buon padre, quello studente italiano, quel piccolo caffè, quel servitore fedele, questa lezione difficile, sulla torre alta.

3. *Translate:* se lui ci aiutasse, erano stati amati, aspettandole, l'avevamo, ne avrai, li hanno battuti, si capisce, lo cedemmo loro, lo comprano, si erano divertiti, ci entrarono, se loro non ci fossero, s'incontrarono, glielo mandai, lui lo mangerà, ve ne avevo parlato, chi li perdette?, che cosa preferirebbe lei?, se lo premesse, ci sarei restato, le telefonavo, lasciatolo, benché ci capisca, ve lo restituì, non l'hanno ricevuta, ripetéteglielo, vi sareste, glielo restituì, non gli cedano, siete chiamato, se lo spiegheranno, sono stati ricevuti, gli si è restituito, le sarà spiegato, si è perduto, ve lo manderanno,

glieli avranno mostrati, se vi avessero sentito, la servano, benchè lo temano, lui li avvertì, non gliene parlare, ce lo spiegaron, gli si erano presentati.

4. Translate into Italian: there they are, we shall be there, if they should buy it, they would carry it to him, he will applaud them, I feared it, are they fighting there?, they are not fleeing, we should have gone in, they would have had it, did he have any?, although they had lost it, will they pay me?, I should prefer it, what has he received?, wait for us.

5. Study these proverbs: ¹ 1. A ogni uccello suo nido è bello. 2. Buona compagnia, mezza la via. 3. Chi cerca, trova. 4. Chi dorme non piglia pesci. 5. Chi ha fiorini trova cugini. 6. Chi non lavora non mangia. 7. Chi s' aiuta, il ciel l' aiuta. 8. Chi tarda arriva, male all'oggia. 9. Gli assenti han sempre torto. 10. Il buon vino non ha bisogno di frasca. 11. Il passo più duro è quello dell'uscio. 12. La fame non ha legge. 13. La fine corona l'opera. 14. La notte porta consiglio. 15. L'aurora indossa. 16. L'età porta senno. 17. Meglio tardi che mai. 18. Non v'è rosa senza spine. 19. Oggi a me, domani a te. 20. Scopava nuova scopa bene.

¹ Many of the sentences from this point on contain words not given in the preceding vocabularies. See the statements on pp. 155 and 171.

6. Translate into Italian: 1. Whose ideas are those? They are not yours, I hope. 2. If you hadn't told it to me yourself, I shouldn't have believed it. 3. If you haven't the money, I'll lend it to you with pleasure. 4. I was afraid that you were¹ wrong, but according to my cousin's letter you are right. 5. How many times has he repeated it to you? 6. Whom are they calling? I thought that they were¹ all here. 7. He was studying there at the desk, and didn't even look at them when they came in. 8. Although there are not so many churches here, they are more interesting than those we visited yesterday. 9. Why didn't he let us go in? Probably because it was too early. 10. Who was it that telephoned to you? That gentleman to whom I telephoned this morning. He is going back tomorrow to Venice.

¹ Use the subjunctive.

LESSON 18. THE MODERN POLITE FORM OF DIRECT ADDRESS

Study 52.

EXERCISE 18

1. *Translate in two ways (as third person feminine, and as used in direct address):* lèi è qui, con lèi, la chiamávano, chiámo lèi, le parlerò, è cérta, è restáta, lèi cantáva, dópo di lèi, la ringrázio, guardávano lèi, le telefoneréi, sarà fortunáta, si è divertíta.

2. *Translate in three ways (as third person masculine, as third person feminine, and as used in direct address):* éra là, l' aiuterò, gliélo mandái, si tróva, se lo ripête, páqli, mi páqli, è gentíle, il suo libro, studiáva, l' incontrái, gliéne ha parláto, si divérte, céda, si spiéghi, éra gióvane, i suôi occhiáli.

3. *Translate in two ways (as third person, and as used in direct address):* sóno qui, lóro érano próniti, cóntro di lóro, li chiamáva, le incontrái, riceverò lóro, parlerò lóro, si tróvano, se lo ripêtono, párlino, mi párlino, sóno cérti, érano entráte, il lóro trêno.

4. *Replace these phrases by the corresponding phrases in modern polite usage, supposing one person to be addressed:* saréte qui, vói ci capíte, secóndo vói, vi troverò, cercávo vói, vi applaudívano, ve lo prêsto, vi siête ferító, ve lo ripetéste, guardáte, sentítemi, il vôstro ombrêllo.

5. *Replace the phrases in section 4 by the corresponding phrases in modern polite usage, supposing two men to be addressed.*

NOTE.— In the remainder of this exercise, and in all the following exercises, use only the modern polite form of direct address, and suppose the English ‘you’ to be singular, unless there is some indication that it refers to more than one person.

6. *Translate into Italian:* you are working, you will sing, for you, I’m waiting for you, I will serve you, he will telephone to you, I was speaking to you, did he send it to you?, you were explaining yourself, did you repeat it to yourself?, stay, thank him, you are happy, you have returned, your brother.

7. Translate the first five sentences in Ex. 14, section 6, and the first five in Ex. 16, section 6, supposing them to be used in direct address.

8. Translate into Italian the first five sentences in Ex. 15, section 3, and the first five in Ex. 17, section 6, using the modern polite form of direct address.

LESSON 19. ANDÁRE AND FÁRE

Study 92 through 2 (Fare); also 48 (a), (b), (e), 54 (h), 56 (b), 78 (d).

EXERCISE 19

1. Translate: andò, andréte, vánno, andáste, va', éra andáto, ci andréi, váda, andávano, sóno andáti, vi andái, andávo, sarêbbe andáta, vâtene, si va.

2. Translate into Italian: we went, you¹ go, they will go, you went there, he will go, he has gone there, they are going away, it goes, we should have gone, go, she went away, let them go.

¹ Remember the directions given in the NOTE on p. 123.

3. Translate: fáccia, facéste, fátto, facciámó, féceró, avéva fátto, faréstí, fo, li féce, farà, lo fácciano, si fa, è fátto, lo si fa, fáteli entráre, la fa lèggere,¹ le fa lèggere la lèttera, gliéla fa lèggere, me lo féce trováre.

¹ Translate this phrase in two ways.

4. Translate into Italian: I did, he will do, they are making, doing, they would make, make, you made, we have made, let them make, they will do it, we made them, ~~they are made~~, I'll have him sing, I'll have it sung, I'll have him sing it.

5. Study these sentences: 1. Mi fáccia il favóre di chiamárlo súbito. 2. Chi va piáno va sáno¹ e va lontáno. 3. Facciámó una partíta al biliárdo? Oggi no, ho trôppo da fáre, ío. 4. Se lo pérde, gliélo faránnó cercáre. 5. I suôi affári andrébbero mélgo se non amásse tânto il dólce far niênte. 6. Quândo lúi tornò da fáre il soldáto, lèi

¹ *sano*, 'safely.' Predicate adjectives are often adverbial in force.

si èra fatta spôsa con un altro. 7. "Ah sì?" féce lúi, "lásci fâre a me." 8. Fa fréddo: perchè non fânno un pô' di fuôco qui? 9. Dópo faránno mólte nuôve conoscênze, che si chiameránno ánche amicízie, ma le più vére saránno sêmpre le amicízie fátte in giovinézza. 10. Se n' andò in América, e súbito si féce rícco, ma pôi perdête ógni côsa, e se ne tornò pôvero¹ com' èra andáto.

¹ The repetition of a word serves to emphasize it.

6. *Translate into Italian:* 1. He goes to the city every day. 2. Go and see if they are here. 3. I had him make it so because the other one was made so. 4. If they had gone there yesterday, they would have found him there. 5. We had him carry it to the village. 6. If they do as he has done, they will do more honor to him than to themselves. 7. We make more of it than they, and ours is better than theirs. 8. He went away this morning, but he'll come back soon. 9. Let him go and find it and bring it to me here. 10. It's a pretty place: we go there every Sunday.

~~8. Where is it?~~ Ce andam ogni domenica.

LESSON 20. DÁRE AND STÁRE

Study 92, 3 and 4; also 54 (c), (d).

Timp. Subj.
inight
Giv.

EXERCISE 20

1. *Translate:* diéde, daréte, díá, dánno, dêtte, darái, déste, diámo, diédero, dái, hánno dáto, me lo dávano, gliélo darébbe?, ce lo díá, diámogliene, ve ne daránno, se ne dà, l' avéva dáto lóro, dámmene, gli si è dáto.

2. *Translate into Italian:* I should give, I gave, you are giving, give, we have given, I was giving, they gave them to me, he gives himself to us, he gave them some, I had given it to her, will you give me some?, we should have given them to you.

3. *Translate:* staréste, stávano, stétté, stíá, steste, stánno, stétero, starébbe, státe, sta', stémmo, stái, stíano, stíamo, starà, sto lavorando, stáva parlando, stáva per dírmelo.

4. Translate into Italian: he was standing, they would stand, I stood, let them stand, we stood, you are standing stand, let us stand, he stood, they are calling, I was about to thank you.

5. Study these sentences: 1. Cós' hái in quélла máno? Dámmelo súbito. 2. Cómе sta? Beníssimo, grázie, e Léi? 3. Stáva per domandárgli perchè non se ne fósse andáto. 4. Per il Natále gli si diédero déi líbri italiáni. 5. Chi dà prêsto, è cóme se désse dúa vólte. 6. Stía attênto: non si fáccia mále. 7. Daránno il vóto a chi mèglio li pága. 8. Poverétta! Sta sêmpre lì a cucíre. 9. Príma facéva l' ingegnêre, ma pôi si diéde állo stúdio délla filosofía. 10. Tútti gli facévano degl' inchíni profondi, e gli dávano dell' illustríssimo.

6. Translate into Italian: 1. He gave you two of them, and I gave you three. 2. They have come back, but they are standing outside. 3. If it's his, give it to him. 4. They were explaining it to him when we came in. 5. Here you are at last: I was about to go and call you. 6. How much would you have given him? Not a cent. 7. They are giving a dinner this evening for that English writer. 8. Yesterday he was a little better, but today he's worse. 9. I thank you, sir; your words have given me the courage to (di) continue. 10. Give them some money, but don't let them come in.

¹ Translate by the proper form of *essere*.

² Use the partitive construction.

LESSON 21. ARTICLES

Study 10-16 inclusive, 45 (a)-(e) inclusive.

EXERCISE 21

1. Review Exercise 3, sections 2, 3, 4.

2. Study these sentences: 1. Nell' unità sta la fôrza. 2. Preferísce l' Ariôsto állo Spenser e Dânte állo Shakespeare. 3. Andámmo in Inghiltêrra cólla mádre, e quândo nós tornámmo lêi ci restò con úna súa cugína. 4. Éra ôrfano, ma un súo zío gli facéva da pádre. 5. Avéva i capélli néri e fólti; néri ánche gli ôcchi; néro l' ábito, néri

i guánti. 6. Il médico gli toccáva il pólso: la fêbre montáva. 7. Si è fátto móltó mále; avrà a restáre a cásá úna settimána alméno. 8. Gli uômini piú grândi hánno quâsi sêmpre le maniêre sêmplici. 9. È un gran poêta; chi lo nêga párla da sciôccô. 10. Ha vendûto la cásá e ógni côsa, ed è partíto per gli Státi Uníti d' Amêrica.

chi abitudine ci hanno finito che si ama

3. *Translate into Italian:* 1. Habits make us what we are. 2. We are still in France, but we hope to (di) go to Italy this summer. 3. Mr. Rossi loves books, and spends almost all his time in his study; if he isn't well, it's his fault. 4. Poor Ghedini was a friend of mine. 5. Last year Queen Margherita travelled through France. 6. He took off his hat and made us a low bow. 7. Venice is perhaps the most beautiful of the cities of Italy. 8. If he is an Italian, let him be worthy of his fatherland. 9. He is still very young, but he talks like a man. 10. Give him your handkerchief quick; he has cut his hand.

il suo fazzoletto

Sì tagliò la mano

LESSON 22. IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION

Read 64-67; study 92, 6-10.

EXERCISE 22

1. *Translate:* saprò, sêppe, sái, saprémmo, sánno, sapévo, câdono, cadrò, cáddi, cadúto, cädde, cadrêbbe, dobbiámo, dovêtti, dêvi, dovémmo, dovérono, dovréte, sedéi, siêdono, sedêndo, sedéte, sedêtte, sedéva, véda, víde, vedrái, vísto, védano, vídero; l'avrémo sapúto, vi cädde, me lo dêve, vi sedéva?, ce lo vedémmo, lo séppero, ci sarêbbe cadúto, gliélo dobbiámo, ci sedêtti, li vedrà.

2. *Translate into Italian:* we know, they knew, you had known, know, they fell, I was falling, we shall fall, you fell, he owes, we should owe, they owe, owing, he is sitting, they will sit, you were sitting, seated, we should see, let him see, I saw, let us see; did he know it?, they had fallen there, they owe it to her, they are sitting there, did they see us?

3. Study these sentences: 1. Stávano insieme álla finêstra a guardáre la néve che cadéva lênta lênta. 2. Che búio! Non ci si véde¹ punto! 3. Il pôvero vêcchio stáva sedúto al cânto del camíno. 4. Vídero il lóro bambíno che giocáva² cólle pistôle déllo zío. 5. Non so se Léi sáppia la triste notízia. 6. Si vedéva nélle súe manière un non so che di nuôvo e di stráno. 7. Mi hánno dáto tutto; non mi si dêve più nulla. 8. Cói pensieri che gli girávano per la tête non sapéva più in che móndo si fósse. 9. Il pôco che si sa, si sáppia bêne. 10. Non dimenticáte i ~~cáduti~~^{partitive construct} per la pátria.

¹ *Non ci si véde*, 'One can't see.' There are several verbs that may assume the idea of possibility in the present and past descriptive tenses.

² *che giocáva*, 'playing.' An Italian relative clause is often equivalent to an English participle.

4. Translate into Italian: 1. Let's see where they are going. 2. He was standing there talking with his brother, when a brick fell on his head. 3. Did you see them speak to him? Do you know their names? 4. They will not know what we are doing. 5. See: they have given me some gloves like yours. 6. I hope that tomorrow you will all know the lesson. 7. If I see him, I'll give him the ten lire I owe him. 8. He had him sit down beside the desk. 9. Were they not standing there when you saw them? 10. He owed him everything, yet he went away leaving him alone and sick.

¹ Use the partitive construction.

LESSON 23. NOUNS

Study 22, 23, 24, 25.

EXERCISE 23

1. Review Exercise 4, sections 2 and 3.
2. Give the plural of each of these masculine nouns: ágo, amíco, bácio, bôsco, bráccio, cántico, collêga, díto, dúca, equívoco, fíglia, fuôco, ginôcchio, guáio, luçgo, míglia, mônaco, nemíco, ôbbligo, ôcchio, páio, patriárca, stûdio, túrco, uôvo.
3. Give the plural of each of these feminine nouns: bibliotêca, côscia, fâbbrica, fáccia, frângia, fúga, giácca, léga, valânga, valígia.

4. Give the masculine and feminine plural of each of these adjectives: artístico, búio, cárico, ciêco, clássico, dóppio, fréscio, grígio, lárgo, lúngo, pôco, próprio, simpático, vágio, vêcchio.

5. Study these sentences: 1. La ricchézza déi contadíni sta nelle bráccia. 2. Tornárono tútti cárichi di frútta e di confétti. 3. Si sentì tremáre le ginôcchia per la paúra. 4. E i mèdici, non gli dârno più speránza? 5. In quéi villâggi ci sóno moltíssimi ciéchi. 6. I suôi¹ lo crêdono un buôn ragázzo; ma ha mólti vízi e pochís-sime virtù. 7. Che c' è di nuôvo? Gli operái hánno fatto sciôpero. 8. Ha studiáto il tedesco dûe ánni, ed óra lo párla assái bêne. 9. Il súo aspêtto avéva qualche côsa di misteriôso, quásí di divíno. 10. Le lóro fâcce e maniêre hánno un non so che di sémplice e di umáno che fa vedére che la lóro víta si fónda sul véro e non sul fâlso.

¹ *I suôi*, 'His family.' The masculine plural possessives are often used in this way.

6. Translate into Italian: 1. Yesterday morning they walked more than ten miles. 2. They hope that their old friends will arrive this evening. 3. We saw them with our own eyes. 4. The lakes are longer than they¹ are¹ broad. 5. He has finished his studies on the libraries of ancient times. 6. Give me two pairs of stockings. 7. They are very agreeable young men. 8. Her eyes were black as night, and her cheeks were white as snow. 9. He has lost two fingers of his right hand. 10. The monarchs of Milan were called dukes; those of Venice, doges; those of Rome, popes; and those of Naples, kings.

¹ Omit these words in translating.

LESSON 24. IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION (continued)

Study 92, 11-17.

EXERCISE 24

1. Translate: giácciono, giácque, giacêndo, piacerêi, piáce, piác-quero, táccia, táci, tacqui, suôle, sólito, solévano, dorrà, dôlse, rimásero, rimângá, rimarrésté, tiêne, terréte, téne, tenúti, têngano.

teníamo; gli piáce,¹ gli piáccio, le piácciono, vi piacéva?, piácque lóro, gli duôle,¹ vi rimángano, c' è rimásta, vi saránno rimásti, li tenéva, teníamolo, l' avéva tenúto.

→ The personal object of *piacere* or *dolere* is indirect.

2. Translate into Italian: he was lying, it lay, they please, you will please, they were silent, we shall be silent, they were wont, it grieves, remain, they remain, thou holdest, they would hold; it pleases me, I like it,¹ they please me, I like them, it pleased him, he liked it, she liked it, we liked it, they liked it, they have remained there, they are held, we should have held them.

¹ When 'like' has a noun or a pronoun as object, the sentence should be recast for translation into Italian by substituting 'please' for 'like,' and making the original object the subject and the original subject the object: 'I like it' = 'it pleases me.'

3. Study these sentences: 1. Gli piacerébbe móltò se Léi gliélo désse. 2. Arrivárono lunedì, e ci rimarránno alménò fino a doménica. 3. Non crédo che quel póstò gli piáccia:¹ non c' è niénte da fáre. 4. Iéri m' entrò úna spína nel piéde, e ancóra mi duôle. 5. Tengo per férmo che un tále dóno non gli piacerà. 6. Facéva un gran fréddo; ma si tenéva vivo il fuôco, e si stáva al caminéttò. 7. È diffíclle piacérgli, e lúi non cérra mái di piacére a nessúno. 8. Ha tánté buône qualitá: peccáto che non sáppia tenér la língua. 9. Mi fáccia il piacére di fármelo vedére. 10. La nôtte tacéva: non un suôno, non úna vóce; sólo si sentíva, da lontáno, il mormorío del fiúme.

¹ *piáccia*, 'will please.' The present subjunctive often has a future tense-value.

4. Translate into Italian: 1. It fell and lay three days on the ground. 2. He was sitting in the room where his brother lay sick. 3. Have you seen my new coat? how do you like it? 4. If they keep still, we shall not know where they have been. 5. I have been studying too much; my eyes are paining me. 6. If you don't like this one, I will give you another. 7. It would grieve him very much if they should go¹ away now. 8. The village lies at the foot of the mountain, near the river. 9. Don't go now: stay to dinner, and then let's go to the theatre. 10. He kept us in doubt up to the last moment.

¹ 'should go': use the past subjunctive.

LESSON 25. AUGMENTATIVES, DIMINUTIVES, AND NUMERALS

Study 35-40 inclusive.

EXERCISE 25

1. *Pronounce and translate:* cinquantatrè, settantaséi, novantadúe, cêntodiciassête, dugêntoquarantôto, quattrocentottantúno, seicênto-trentanôve, novecêntosessantasête, milletrecêntoventidúe, millenovecêntoquindici, tremilaquarantacínque.

2. *Read in Italian:* 31, 77, 243, 854, 1265, 1321, 1492, 1621, 1775, 1915; Sísto IV, Innocêndo VIII, Alessândro VI, Pío III, Giúlio II, Leóne X, Adriáno VI, Clemênte VII, Pío IX, Leóne XIII, Pío X, Benedéttio XV.

3. *Translate:* sóno le tre, sóno le cíngue e diêci, sóno le diêci e un quárto, sóno le sêi e mèzzo, sóno le nôve méno vénti, sóno le ôtto méno un quárto, sóno le dûe méno dódici.

4. *Translate into Italian:* it's four o'clock, it's 6:12, it's half past eight, it's 25 minutes of nine, it's six minutes of five; April 1, April 2, April 3, April 22.

5. *Translate in terms of American money:*¹ diêci centêsimi, cinquânta centêsimi, úna líra e vénti centêsimi, trentún sólido, dûe líre e quarânta, cíngue líre e mèzzo, sêtte líre e cinquânta, vénti líre, sessantadûe líre e quarantacínque centêsimi, mílle líre.

¹ 100 centêsimi = 1 líra = 20 cents; 5 centêsimi = 1 sólido.

6. *Translate in terms of Italian money:* \$.05, \$.18, \$.25, \$.42, \$1.00, \$1.50, \$6.38, \$100.00.

7. *Study these sentences:* 1. La lêttera fu datâta "Róma, venerdì 15 febrário 1823." 2. Lo fornì di úna ventína di líre, trôppo per chi le dáva, trôppo pôche per chi le ricevêva. 3. Il côsto totâle sarêbbe di líre cinquantaséi e centêsimi settantacínque. 4. Lúi allóra avéva ventiquâtro ánni, e lêi soltânto diciôtto. 5. Êrano in tútto quindici bigliétti da diêci líre. 6. Nel quarantôto combatté a Miláno cóntro gli Austríaci. 7. Ha pubblicáto or óra un volúme súlla pittúra del

Trecênto. 8. Vi andò néi prími giórni del 1612, e vi rimáse fíno a mèzzo il 1614. 9. A che óra párte il trêno? Álle quíndici e mèzzo, cioè álle tre e mèzzo dópo mèzzogiórno. 10. La raccólta più impor-tânte délle poesie italiáne piú antíche è il códice vaticáno 3793.

- 8. Translate into Italian:* 1. They woke me at five o'clock. It was dark and cold, and it was snowing hard. 2. The sonnet consists of 14 lines, and each line of 11 syllables. 3. The 15th century and the 16th are the two centuries of the Renaissance in Italy. 4. He made him repeat it five times. 5. The work of Manzóni falls in the first half of the 19th century. 6. I gave him 30 lire, and he bought two pairs of shoes. 7. Seven months have 31 days, four 30, and one 28 or 29. 8. Would you do me the favor to (*di*) lend me ten lire or so until Monday? 9. From the tower one saw thousands¹ and thousands of persons crowded in the streets and the squares. 10. Victor Emmanuel II was the first king of the Third Italy.

¹ Use *migliáio*.

LESSON 26. IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION (continued)

Study 92, 18-22; also 79 (b) 1.

EXERCISE 26

- 1. Translate:** varrò, válse, válgono, valémmo, valévano, válsero, vógliono, vuóî, vorrà, volévo, vuôle, vorrêi, paíamo, párví, pári, parrémmo, párvero, parréte, potéi, pôssono, potêndo, potéte, potè, può, persuáda, persuáse, persuadévano, persuadiámo, persuáso, persuádi; lo varránnو, l' hánno volúto, ci éra pársø, non avréste potúto, persuadételi, non lo valéva, vorránnو fárlo?, gli párvø, non si può, sóno státi persuási.

- 2. Translate into Italian:** it would be worth, we are worth, it was worth, you were worth, they wished, I was wishing, we shall wish, you wished, it seems, we should seem, they seem, seeming, he can, they will be able, you were able, they can, we should persuade, let him persuade, I persuaded, let us persuade; will it

be worth it?, did they wish it?, it seemed to us, we have not been able, haven't they persuaded him?

3. Study these sentences: 1. Rimângâ se può, ma váda se ha da studiare. 2. Quânto crêde che válgano quégli anêlli? 3. È diffíclle, lo so, ma côsa vuôle? fáccia tútto quéllo che potrà. 4. Avéva fátto cóme paréva mèglio a lúi. 5. La chiêsa sta più in álto: ci vuôle un' óra per arrivârci. Ôh allóra non vále la péna. 6. Chi non può fáre cóme vuôle, fáccia cóme può. 7. Non si può contentárlo: più ne ha e più ne vuôle. 8. Dúe non basteránno: ce ne vògliono alméno quâttro. 9. Se potésse fármî quéstò piacére Le saréi mílle vòlte obbligáto. 10. Volére è potére.

4. Translate into Italian: 1. We shall not be able to persuade him. 2. They seem large, but they cannot be good. 3. If you wish it, they will stay with you. 4. I should not have thought that they were worth¹ so much. 5. They owe me *20 lire*, and they are not willing to pay me. 6. I wanted to give it to you, but I couldn't. 7. My head aches so much that I can't study. 8. He's going away tomorrow, although he wants¹ to stay here. 9. I should like to speak to you about it; could you stay ten minutes or so? 10. It takes a brave man to (a) do a thing like that.

¹ Use the subjunctive.

Ne' stude la fasa LESSON 27. AUXILIARY VERBS

Study 54, 57.

EXERCISE 27

1. Translate: dêvo parlâre, dovévo parlâre, dovéi parlâre, dovrò parlâre, dovréi parlâre, ho dovúto parlâre, avévo dovúto parlâre, avrò dovúto parlâre, avrêi dovúto parlâre; pôssso parlâre, potévo parlâre, potéi parlâre, potrò parlâre, potrêi parlâre, ho potúto parlâre, avévo potúto parlâre, avrò potúto parlâre, avrêi potúto parlâre; vògliono parlâre, volévo parlâre, vòlli parlâre, vorrò parlâre, vorrêi parlâre, ho volúto parlâre, avévo volúto parlâre, avrò volúto parlâre, avrêi volúto parlâre; gliélo avévano dovúto dáre, non avrémmo potúto persuadérlo, avréste volúto vedérli?, non êra

potúto entráre, avrêbbe dovúto finírlo, avevâmo volúto comprárne; stiâmo per andârcene, rimâse tradito, va studiato così, lo fécero portâre, bisognerêbbe prestârglieli, hândo dâ cercárlo, non saprêi spiegárlo, non potémmo a méno di non tacere.

ive cosa n'ha

2. *Translate into Italian:* they are to speak, we must speak, you were to speak, he had to speak, we shall have to speak, I ought to speak, he would have to speak, they have been obliged to speak, he must have spoken, she had had to speak, we shall have had to speak, he ought to have spoken, they were not able to speak, he may have spoken, they could have spoken, I should not have been able to speak, I might have spoken, will they be willing to speak?, he had been willing to speak.

3. *Study these sentences:* 1. Avêndo tanto da fâre in città, avréste dovúto partire col trêno délle sétte e mèzzo. 2. Vôlle fâre úna vísita a cásâ súa per vedere i suôi, che non aveva vistî da tanto têmpo. 3. A quel têmpo non si potéva vedere tutto ciò che s' è veduto dôpo. 4. Lâsciano la scuôla con l' ôdio per le côse di cui si sóno dovûti occupâre e per gli autóri di cui hândo dovúto studiare le ôpere. 5. Non capisco cóme úna côsa símile ábbia potûto accadere. 6. Dôpo avér fatto tutti gli sfôrzi possíbili, si è dovûto capitolare. 7. Non sarêbbe potûto arrivare a Firênze neânche la séra. 8. Ti chiamerò prêsto perchè dovrâi andare álla stazionê a piêdi. 9. Avéva sperâto che nellâ cásâ patêrna avrêbbe potûto godere alméno un pô' d' affêtto. 10. Mólto sa chi pôco sa, se tacér sa.

4. *Study these sentences:* 1. If I saw him, I should have to speak to him. 2. You ought to know when you will be able to bring it to us. 3. He would have had to keep still: he didn't know their names. 4. You must work if you want to please him. 5. They may find it, but I'm afraid that they have¹ left it in the city. 6. It grieves me, but I shall have to do it. 7. We ought to have kept still, but we couldn't help laughing. 8. He would like to know why they had to go away. 9. In what might I have the honor of serving you? 10. He always wanted to do what seemed best to him.

¹ Use the subjunctive.

LESSON 28. IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION

Study 92 (e), (f), (g) (on p. 85), 24-73 [omitting verbs marked Rare, and forms in parentheses].

EXERCISE 28

1. *Inflect the present tenses of affliggere, conoscere, crescere, and leggere.*

2. *Translate:* accendêndo, accése, afflítto, allúdono, ardéva, arderà, risolvêtte, chiúde, chiuderémo, conosciúto, conósca, conóbbero, corriámo, corrévanò, córse, crésce, crescerà, cuôce, decída, decísi, difeso, diréssse, dirigerò, discússero, distínti, divísero, esistíto, esístono, esprímano, espréssse, fítto, fínga, fingiámo, frígge, fúso, invásero, lèggano, lèssero, mettiámo, mísi.

3. *Translate into Italian:* I light, he alluded, I will shut, he knew, run, grown, cooking, they decided, let us divide, it exists, he will express, fried, they will invade, let him read, they put.

4. *Study these sentences:* 1. Gli espréssse il súo rincresciménto per quel che si êra fatto. 2. Gli si leggéva la giôia nel víso. 3. Ci míse davânti¹ un mûcchio di cárte. 4. Mi lásci parlare; non chiúda il cuôre álla pietà. 5. Lo conóbbi a Firênze l' ánno scórso. 6. Il fôndo del románzo è stôrico, ma vi è mescoláto il fínto col véro. 7. Più li conósce e più gli crésce l' amicízia per lóro. 8. Le opinióni si divísero: alcúni applaudírono la súa azíone, áltri la biasimárono. 9. Nel Cinquecênto Francési e Spagnuôli côrsero tútta l' Itália. 10. Distinguiámo nel súo caráttere quel che vi è di sincêro² e quel che vi è di fâlso.

¹ *Ci míse davânti*, ‘He put before us.’ When the logical object of an Italian preposition is an unemphatic personal pronoun, the use of a disjunctive pronoun is often avoided by putting a conjunctive pronoun before the verb and treating the preposition as an adverb.

² *quel che vi è di sincêro*, ‘its elements of sincerity.’

5. *Translate into Italian:* 1. It's the third time she has read that book. 2. Do you know my friend Mr. Ghedíni? 3. He went to the door, shut it, and put the key in his pocket. 4. I lighted the other

light and ran into the room. 5. Do you want fried eggs? 6. What is she cooking now? 7. Do me the favor to (*di*) shut the door. Have those windows been shut? 8. Where did you put my hat? I have to go now, and I can't find it. 9. To whom was he alluding when he spoke of his enemies? 10. The schools will be closed from June to September.

LESSON 29. MOODS AND TENSES

Study 69-76 inclusive.

EXERCISE 29

1. *Study these sentences:* 1. Il lasciár le mûra délla città e il rivedére la cásá patêrna nel píccolo villággio, fúrono sensazioní piêne di giôia. 2. Vedêndolo veníre con quéi lìbri in máno, n' éra móltô liêta, sperândo che gliéli avrêbbe regaláti. 3. Partírono pôco dôpo il levár del sóle, e tornárono sul far délla séra. 4. Non sapéva nè cóme fâre nè dóve andáre. 5. A continuáre così si córre il perícolo di pêrdere tútto ciò che si è guadagnáto. 6. Credè di avér trováto quel che cercáva da tânto têmpo. 7. Quândo avrái gli ánni che ho ío, non sarái míca sì prônto a giudicáre gli áltri. 8. Finíta la lezíone, tornárono a cásá, e trovárono il cugíno che li aspettáva. 9. Non ci avrêbbe nûlla¹ da dáre a un pôvero ciêco? 10. Tórno pián piáno álla cásá; píccchio; nessúno, rispónde; éntro; e ci trôvo— cosa crêde? 11. Inútile illúdersi; non c' è più sperânza. 12. L' êsser simpátici non bâsta, no; bisórgna êssere útili a qualche cosa. 13. Rimarrái fino álle cíngue, non è véro? Non mi díre di no. 14. Quândo arrivái a cásá, mio pádre non c' éra. Mía mádre si spaventò, perchè vedêndomi così pállido mi credétté maláto. 15. Augûrâta la buôna nôtte al padróne, se n' andò in fréttta. 16. Lúi gli vendè l' ánimâ, e il diávolo gli promíse che per un cértô têmpo gli avrêbbe ubbidítô cóme a súo signóre. 17. Tornáti (che fúrono) domandárono súbito da mangiare. 18. In quel vágone è proibítô fumáre. 19. Appéna mi víde, la súa espressióne, da irrequiêta che éra,² si féce minacciósa. 20. La strâda, che ména a Sorrênto è un succêdersi contínuo di pûnti di vista stupêndi.

¹ *Non ci avrêbbe nûlla*, 'Haven't you anything?' The use of the past future gives the sentence an apologetic tone.

² *da irrequiêta che éra*, 'instead of anxious.'

2. Translate into Italian: 1. Do you prefer traveling to studying? 2. I'll have it given back at once. 3. Their manners may be crude, but they are sincere. 4. Gratitude is to be praised. 5. You know, doubtless,¹ that my brother has returned. 6. When you arrive in (*a*) Florence, you will find at the hotel a letter from (*di*) my agent. 7. Have you not heard him spoken of? 8. I have been here for two months, working² in the libraries. 9. Where are they? They are there outside, waiting for³ you. 10. He ought to have spoken to you about it himself, instead of writing.

¹ Express this idea in the verb.

² Translate by *a* with the infinitive.

³ Use a relative clause instead of a participle.

LESSON 30. IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION (continued)

Study 92, 75-124 [omitting verbs marked Rare or Poetical, and forms in parentheses].

EXERCISE 30

1. Inflect the present tenses of muovere and sorgere.

2. Translate: mordono, mòsse, moverà, násce, nacquero, nascosto, nascondevo, negletto, offendendo, offesi, perso, perderèbbe, piovéva, pioverà, prênda, présò, protéggono, protéssè, redenta, rásò, rendévanò, ridi, risérò, rispónda, rispòsi, rótti, rúppero, scendémmo, scorgiamo, scríva, scríssi, scosso, sórge, spargéva, sporgono, successe, téso, torce, tórsè, ucciderà, víncò, vinsero, volsi, volgerèbbe.

3. Translate into Italian: they were moving, he was born, hide, we are losing, it is raining, let them take, he laughed, they answered, broken, write, he shook, they rise, she spent, it happens, it would kill, I shall conquer, let him live, they turned.

4. Study these sentences: 1. Se te li prêsto, quândo me li renderái? 2. La scodellâ gli cádde per têrra e si rúppe in tre pêzzi. 3. Sóli quelli che gli vivono da prèsso sârno che égli è anche più buôno che

grânde. 4. Scríva un pô' mèglio; altriménti non potránnò lèggere niênte. 5. Succèsse úna páusa, rótta finalmènte da un grído di terróre. 6. Non si lásci víncere dall' íra. 7. Il códice fu scrítto, páre, vêrso la fíne del Trecênto. 8. È succêsso quéllo che pur trôppo non potéva non succêdere. 9. L' Itália nácque cóme náscono tútte le naziôni nuôve, dall' energía déi méno che pôrta al destino l' inêrzia déi piû. 10. Bêñ perdúto è conosciúto.

5. Translate into Italian: 1. He put it on the table, but someone has moved it. 2. Let's stand under that tree while it rains. 3. If he had moved it, it would have fallen. 4. There the mountains rise from the waters of the lake. 5. Goldâni and Alfiéri lived in the 18th century. 6. They are all running: what has¹ happened? 7. He shook his head, smiling, and turned² toward the door. 8. When I spoke to him about it, he laughed, and did not answer me. 9. In what year was Dante born? 10. They don't think he will live³ if he remains here.

¹ Translate by the proper form of *essere*.

² Put the proper reflexive pronoun before the verb.

³ Use the subjunctive.

LESSON 31. CONJUNCTIONS

Study 78.

EXERCISE 31

1. Give the meanings of these conjunctions: a méno che non, acciochè, affinchè, ánzi, avânti che, benchè, chè, dacchè, dâto che, dónde, dovúnque, finchè, finchè non, méntre, neánche, ossía, perchè (*with indicative*), perchè (*with subjunctive*), per quânto, poichè, prima che, purchè, pûre, qualúnque, quási, sebbêne, se non che, siccóme.

2. Study these sentences: 1. Seguitò a filáre finchè il fíglío del re non se ne fu andáto. 2. L' avrêbbe potûto fâre, purchè l' avésse volûto. 3. Mólti sóno e i difêtti e i perícoli di úna tále decisiône. 4. I giórni passávano sênza che il pádre gliéne parlásse. 5. Non l' avrêbbe mái sapûto, se non che le si spedì da Miláno un giornále cólla notízia. 6. Lo conoscévo néi giórni che êra qui a visitáre

la nônnna. 7. Non ci aiúta pûnto, ánzi c' impedísce. 8. Le súe espressióni, per quânto fôssero fôrti, non êrano esageráte. 9. Mi dispiácque di non avérla vedúta prima che partísse. 10. Non voléva nemménlo vedérlo, non che parlárgli.

3. Translate into Italian: 1. They were sitting in the parlor while I was writing the letters. 2. Who is going there today? Either he or I. 3. They received them as if they were old friends. 4. He remained at the window until he heard them knock. 5. We will pardon him provided he will promise to (*di*) give it back to us at once. 6. I found it without difficulty, although he had hidden it with the greatest care. 7. When you see him, do me the favor to (*di*) give him these tickets. 8. I should like to speak to him before he goes. 9. Since they are worth what they cost, why don't you buy them? 10. I sent you¹ here in order that you should study, not in order that you should waste my money.

¹ Use the second person singular in translating this sentence.

LESSON 32. IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION (continued)

Study 92, 127-133.

EXERCISE 32

1. Translate: bévan, bêvve, berà, avrêbbe bevûto, beviámo, bée, chiêsto, chiêsi, chiedéte, chiederánno, chiêda, chiedévano, condurrêi, condótto, condússero, condúca, condúci, sóno condótti, nocéva, nuôce, nôcque, pónga, pósto, posí, poniámo, porrà, pône, traévano, trásnero, trággono, trarrémo, avévano trátto, trágga.

2. Translate into Italian: they would drink, he was drinking, I drank, let him drink, let us ask, he will have asked, they asked, we were asking, I conducted, let them conduct, he has conducted, I was conducting, it will harm, they harmed, we put, put, they are putting, they will put, he dragged, we should drag, I have dragged.

3. Study these sentences: 1. Quândo avrà sêi ánni lo porrêmo a scuôla. 2. Se bevésse un pô' di quel víno, gli farêbbe bêne. 3. Il fumáre trôppo gli ha nociúto graveménte. 4. Non le sa negáre quel

che gli chiède.¹ 5. Soffrì lúnghi ánni di úna malattía di cuôre ché finalménte lo trásse álla mórtē. 6. Ho séte: dámmi da bérē. 7. Vorréi chiéderle úna vacánza di pôchi giórni, finchè mi rimétta un pô' in salúte. 8. Finì col dársi per vínto, e col concédere tútto quánto gli êra richiêsto. 9. Quésto mi ha indótto a riconóscere in lúi l' autóre délle mie disgrázie. 10. Tútte le stráde condúcono a Rómā.

¹ The personal object of *chièdere* is indirect.

4. *Translate into Italian:* 1. Drink a little water. 2. They are putting it in the other corner of the room. 3. Clouds of smoke were rising, and they were dragging everything out of the house. 4. I put it there because I found it there: don't move it. 5. Go and ask him why he didn't read what I wrote. 6. If you stay to dinner, we'll take¹ you to the theatre this evening. 7. The house was placed so that one could see between the hills as far as the river. 8. If you had asked me for² it, I should have given it to you. 9. Then he drew his sword and took³ his place at the head of his company. 10. He put his hands on my shoulders and asked me if I had been a good boy.

¹ Use *menáre*. ² *Chièdere* means 'to ask for.' ³ Use *prêndere*.

LESSON 33. THE SUBJUNCTIVE

Study 77 through (f).

EXERCISE 33

1. *Study these sentences:* 1. Sênta: potrêbbe prestármì per quâlche giórno úna ventína di líre? 2. Bisognáva che ne trovássero un áltro perfêttaménte símile a quéllo che si êra perdútō. 3. Ci fáccia sapére quâle difficoltà ci sía. 4. È il poêta piú clássico e nondiménō il piú modérno che ábbia l' Itália. 5. Quânto mále ci ha fátto! Non l' avéssimo mái visto! 6. Se avésse úno che si prendésse cûra di lúi, áanche lúi potrêbbe far mèglio. 7. Lègga, scríva, non sía mái ozióso, non chiêda mái a nessúno, non spêri che nel suo lavóro. 8. Non vi è piú alcúno che crêda álle lóro stôrie. 9. Ti sía sêmpre nélla ménte che il compiacérsi déi máli dégli áltri è crudeltà. 10. Se vuôle andáre,

se ne váda; per me, ci avrêi piacére. 11. Éra un' idêa di cûi parláva in ógni conversazióne che riguardásse il suo avveníre. 12. Fóssi tu qui con me! Pur trôppo bisórgna óra che tu rimângà in cittâ. 13. Bádi di non parlármi più così; e básti l' avvîso per quêsta vólta 14. Si mostrò prônto a tutto ciò che potésse piacére ai superiôri. 15. Domandò álla sêrva se si potésse parlâre al padrón. 16. Divísero la cittâ in sêi párti, ed elêssero dódici cittadíni che la governássero. 17. Nessúno se ne meravígli: êra da aspettársi. 18. Benchè non vi sía niênte che ábbia l' ária di êssere esageráto, tutto il libro è úna terríbile accúsa. 19. Se ci va spésso, è perchè ci si mangia bêne. 20. Parrêbbe impossibile a chi non lo conoscésse per quell' uômo che è.

2. Translate into Italian: 1. If he were here, perhaps he would be able to give us a little light. 2. He asked me if I were really a count. 3. This is the first and only pleasure I have had since I have been here. 4. It would be enough to (*per*) convince one who had not sworn to remain in the dark. 5. They wanted to give her a name that should recall her aunt's affection. 6. Russia is the only country in (*di*) Europe that he hasn't visited. 7. They are things that happen often, although they seem impossible. 8. Did they ask you if you had read his last novel? 9. Wherever I go, that scene is ever before my eyes. 10. They had placed a guard at the only door by which he could have escaped.

LESSON 34. IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION (continued)

Study 92, 134-148.

EXERCISE 34

1. Translate: côglie, côlse, coglierémo, scélga, scélto, scegliévi, sciogliémmo, sciogliêndo, avrêbbe sciôlto, tôlgono, torrà, torrêi, giungéte, giúnsero, sóno giûnti, piângi, piánse, piangerò, píngi, píngano, pingerârno, spêgne, spêñse, spegnéva, spínga, avéva spínto, spínsero, stréutto, stríngono, stringémmo.

2. Translate into Italian: they gather, we gathered, I was choosing, let them choose, we have taken, I shall take, you are

weeping, I wept, they extinguish, we shall extinguish, you were pushing, I had pushed, we are bound, bind.

3. Study these sentences: 1. Il sóle che caláva tingéva di róssio le ácque del lágoo. 2. La Cappélla Sistína fu dipínta da Michelángelo tra il 1508 e il 1512. 3. Gli afferrò la dêstra e gliéla strínse con fôrza, ma al ritiráre la máno la víde tinta di sângue. 4. Tútti quéllo con cui êra stréttio d' amicízia se n' andárono, lasciándolo sólo sólo. 5. Non si sapéva se ríderne o piângerne; infâtti alcúni piánsero, sorridêndo però fra le lágrime. 6. Se si potéssero parlare úna vólta, le difficultà sarêbbero súbito sciôlte. 7. Èrano giûnti a un tal púnто che bisognáva o víncere o pérder ógni côsa. 8. Stáva inginocchióni cólle máni giûnte in átto di preghiêra. 9. Gli tólse di máno il denáro sênsa nemménlo ringraziárlo. 10. L' imperatôre, poëta égli stêssso, protêsse i poëti e li accôlse e onorò nélla sua côrte.

4. Translate into Italian: 1. Among all the employees they chose him as the most industrious. 2. Then they looked at each other, and began to weep. 3. Go and gather some¹ flowers for the vases in the parlor. 4. When we arrived, the sacristan was putting out the lights. 5. Take² those papers from the table and put them on the desk. 6. In ancient times cities were surrounded by walls and ditches. 7. He pushed me into (*a*) this business, and now he ought to help me. 8. They were crying like children; she was going from one to the other, trying to (*di*) comfort them. 9. We found ourselves compelled to (*a*) ask him for it. 10. He might have surrendered: he chose to (*di*) die.

¹ Use the partitive construction.

² Use *tôgliere*.

LESSON 35. PREPOSITIONS

Study 79.

EXERCISE 35

1. Give the meaning of these prepositions: accânto a, al di là di, attórno a, círca, cóntro, déntro di, diéstro, dirimpéttio a, dópo, eccêttio, fin da, fíno a, fuôri di, innánzi, intórno a, lúngo, óltre, quânto a, rispêttio a, secôndo, síno a, sótto, su, tra, tránne.

2. *Study these sentences:* 1. Se vuôl rimanére con noi, ha da fâre quel che voglio io. 2. Óra le ha compráto úna máccchina da cucíre. 3. Ce lo giurò per quanto avéva di più caro. 4. Da allóra in pôi vîsse da buôn cristiâno. 5. Lo so per cêrto che oggi non gli hánno dâto da mangiare. 6. Al di là del fiúme si vedévanô délle vêccchie tórrî medioeváli. 7. Ci si ammalâvano a centináia per giórno. 8. C' èra úna vólta un bêl fanciúllo dái capelli bióndi e dâgli ôcchi azzúrri, che avéva fra i diêci e i dódici ánni. 9. Lúi, poverétto, stâva zítto a guardármi, ed io gli parlâi con un tôno da fârgli corággio. 10. Álla pôrta délla chiêsa c' èra úna vêccchia che accattáava da chi entráva; il ragazzo andò da lêi, e le diêde metà del suo páne.

3. *Translate into Italian:* 1. They want to have (*fâre*) lunch before the others. 2. You can't persuade him to vote against the government. 3. We'll be at your house in an hour and a half. 4. They will arrive on (*con*) the 5.20 train. 5. He went to France in 1872, and remained there for three or four years. 6. Go tell¹ them they'll have to do without me. 7. His arrival was greeted by all with an exclamation of surprise. 8. I begged my father to take² me to the city to see my cousins. 9. They have been living in Venice for six months. 10. You ought to do something for him instead of letting him suffer so.

¹ Use *dire*, the personal object of which is indirect.

² Use *menâre*.

LESSON 36. IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE FOURTH CONJUGATION

Study 92, 149-163.

EXERCISE 36

1. *Translate:* áprono, aprì, sóno apêrti, côpra, copérse, co-príte, offrímmo, offrirà, offêrsi, soffrîi, hánno soffrêto, soffrirêi, costruívano, digerísce, esaurítô, è státo sepólto, cucívo, émpiono, émpi, émpiere, muôia, morránto, è môrto, ségui, segùi, seguirêi, spárve, sparíscono, sparirà.

2. *Translate into Italian:* we opened, they would open, cover, I covered, let us offer, he has offered, he is suffering, you will suffer, she was sewing, he died, I shall die, following, let us follow, it would disappear, they disappeared.

3. *Study these sentences:* 1. Se la túa pátria avrà bisórgno di te, ôffrile te stéssso. 2. Le finêstre déllo stúdio si áprono all' êst. 3. Pôssa tu godére quant' ío ho soffêrto e sôffro. 4. Tútti i fígli le êrano môrti, l' úno dópo l' áltro, ed êra rimâsta sóla sóla al móndo. 5. Gli appárve in sogno un fantásma che lo minacciáva di môrte. 6. Lúi proseguíva il lavóro sênza badáre a ciò che facévano gli áltrei. 7. Di quéstò si tratterà nel capítolo seguente. 8. Ha la spôsa rícca, ma morrébbe piuttôsto che chiêderle un sóldo. 9. Compiúti gli stúdi, féce un lúngo viággio per l' Eurôpa. 10. Muôr gióvane coluí che al ciélo è cáro.

4. *Translate into Italian:* 1. If the window isn't open, do me the favor to open it. 2. He died last night at half past eleven. 3. Those are old customs that now are disappearing. 4. Let's offer them to her, and if she doesn't want them we'll keep them for ourselves. 5. The king is dead: long¹ live the king! 6. She covered her face with her hands and wept. 7. You have written a song that will not die. 8. I opened the window and called them, but they didn't hear me. 9. If I suffered as they have suffered, I should die. 10. They are building a theatre on the site of those old shops.

¹ Omit this word in translating.

LESSON 37. THE SUBJUNCTIVE (continued)

Study 77 (g), (h), (i).

EXERCISE 37

1. *Study these sentences:*¹ 1. Páre che se ne síano scordáti affátto. 2. Bádi che non gli fácciano mále! 3. Se le dispiáce che lo fácciano gli áltrei, non lo fáccia lêi stéssso. 4. Mi rincrésce che Léi ábbia dovûto partíre sênza vedérli. 5. Non permíse però che finísse così. 6. Côsa

¹ In several of these sentences the *che* clause should be replaced, in translation, by an infinitive construction.

pênsi tu che ci sía da fáre? 7. Non sapéva che s' éra proibito che i forestieri visitássero la fortézza? 8. Non potrái venire dománi? Avréi bisogno che tu mi aiutássi. 9. Il pónete par che ségni il punto in cui il fiúme éntra nel lágó. 10. Non si può non sospettare che l' ábbiano saputo. 11. Paréva ci fóssero dégli spíriti invisibili. 12. Téme che gli si pôssa tógliere quel che ha guadagnato. 13. Vôglia il ciêlo che non vênga un giórno in cui si pênta di non avérmi ascoltato. 14. Lásclino ch' ío gli párali ancóra úna vólta prima che se ne váda! 15. Chi vuôi che le cómPRI, délle scárpe così? 16. Ho lêtto quélle páginas col piû vívo interêsse, e vorrêi che le potéssero lêgger tútti. 17. Se vuôle che gli si pôrti rispêttò, dêve imparáre a rispettare gli áltri. 18. L' ho sentito negáre che la víta per sè stéssa sía desiderábilé. 19. Pagáre e pôi pagáre, perchè i nôstri soldáti vádano a moríre nell' África, non si può pretêndere che piáccia al pôpolo italiáno. 20. Non possiámó permétttere che cêrti pûnti del Mediterrâneo síano prési ed occupáti da colóro che un giórno potrêbbero êsserci nemíci.

2. Translate into Italian: 1. I am surprised that you do not understand it. 2. I know they wanted me to stay¹ until tomorrow. 3. It seemed to us that they were afraid that someone would recognize them. 4. He begged them to give¹ him a little bread. 5. It may be believed that he has earned in this way more than 2000 *lige*. 6. He was ashamed that they should think that he had not been content. 7. Yesterday I heard that he was a little better. 8. Doesn't it seem to you that he is asking too much? 9. He ordered them all to be¹ silent. 10. I hope he'll give you all you want.

¹ Use a *che* clause, turning the preceding personal pronoun into a subject.

LESSON 38. IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE FOURTH CONJUGATION (continued)

Study 92, 164-168.

EXERCISE 38

1. Translate: díssero, dicéva, è státo détto, di', dícano, diréstí, salí, sálga, salíte, salívano, sálgo, salirà, viêni, verrà, vénne, sóno venúti, vênga, verrêi, udírono, ôde, udiránno, êsca, usciámo.

2. *Translate into Italian:* you say, he said, say, they are ascending, I ascended, let us ascend, they came, I shall come, she has come, they hear, hearing, we had heard, he is going out, they went out, I should go out.

3. *Study these sentences:* 1. Quândo uscii di cámara, mía mâdre, già alzâta, mi aspettâva per dírmi addio. 2. Che côsa vuôl díre quêsta parôla? 3. Ci díce che sóno venuti tútti, e che rimarrâno fíno álle diêci. 4. I prezzi délle cárnî sóno già saliti assai. 5. Morì benedicêndo i fígli e i fígli de' fígli suôi. 6. Rifiutò nondiméno l' aiúto che gli veniva offerto. 7. Erano sêmpre sevéri con lúi, sêenza mái dírne il perchè. 8. Pôi le vénne in ménte che avéva promesso di restituírglieli il górnó dôpo. 9. I fátti che siámo venuti narrândo bástano a dimostrâre la falsità dell' accusa. 10. Dímmi con chi práctichi e ti dirò chi séi.

4. *Translate into Italian:* 1. They come and they disappear. Where do they all go? Tell me, do they all die? 2. I'm afraid they won't come if it rains. 3. If it's he, call him, and tell him I should like to speak to him. 4. He is much better now; he goes out almost every day. 5. Let them tell him to come at once. 6. They told me that he had arrived Monday. 7. They came; I heard them open the door; they went up; and then they disappeared. I went out, but they had gone away. 8. Did they tell you when they would come? 9. If he had told you that, what would you have done? 10. I came, I saw, I conquered.

LESSON 39. ADVERBS AND INDEFINITE PRONOUNS

Study 80–91 inclusive.

EXERCISE 39

1. *Give the meanings of these indefinite pronouns and adjectives:* alcuno, altri, altrui, ambedue, certo, chi, chicchessia, ciascheduno, ciascuno, meno, nessuno, nulla, ognuno, paréccchi, per quanto, qualchecosa, qualcuno, qualunque, si, un tale.

2. Study these sentences: 1. Sentì qualchedúno che piangéva lì déntro. 2. Se fóssi Léi, gli scriveréi un' áltra vólta, benchè non Le ábbia mái rispóstò. 3. Sentíva un gran desidêrío di fáre qualcôsa di stráno e di terríbile. 4. L' úno e l' áltro me n' hánno dátó parôla. 5. Ci andrémo insieme, non è véro? Non mi díca di no. 6. Côsa fái lì? O che vuôi bruciár la cásá? 7. Ed êcco che le apparì súlla sôglia un non so che di biánco. 8. L' ha cambiáto tútto, ed óra sì che mi piáce! 9. Non si va in quel luôgo se non per vedére la fontána. 10. Quéstó móndo è fáttó a scále, chi le scénde e chi le sále.

3. Translate into Italian: 1. Do you go there oftener now? What? Yes, every eight or ten days. 2. I shall be there too, day after to-morrow, and I shall stay the whole week. 3. We saw certain things there that we didn't like at all. 4. I should never have believed that they would both leave me. 5. Take care that no one sees you start. 6. Each of you ought to give him something. 7. One must respect the rights of others. 8. One can't say, though, that such a work isn't worth anything. 9. I have but two, but if you want one of them, here it is. 10. He must have known them well; he has lived there for several years.

LESSON 40. REVIEW

EXERCISE 40

1. Give the plural of each of the following combinations: l' ani-mále grígio, il mío bráccio, del caffè nuôvo, nell' êstasi (*fem.*), pôca facoltà, dállea túa famíglia, la máno biánca, l' operáio erôico, l' orígine mística, quel páio, il gran pálco, col vêccchio pôrco, la radíce profónda, l' última ríga, al bél rôgo, lo schérzo cómico, súllo scôglio pittorésco, il buôn síndaco, il telegrámma lúngo, il suo zío.

2. Translate: lo ápra, l' avrémmo, me lo chiêsero, li côglie, condóttovi, ve lo conóbbe, gliélo dêvono, ce lo díá, dítele, lúi li ha divísí, êccotelo, n' êsce, gliélo féce portáre, vi fóste, ci piánse, lo lêssi lóro, l' avéva môsso, muôiano lóro, vi nácque, offértogliclo, vi sarêbbe párso, dovréste piângerne, lo potémmo vedére, me lo rése, li rúppero, si vorrêbbe sapére, le scríssi, avrêbbe dovûto

seguirli, ci stéste, l'avránno strétto, lèi tacque, lo ténge lèi, li tráe, ci vánno, êrano venúti, ci vídero, ci ha vissúto.

3. *Translate into Italian:* will you be there?, *they chose it, we had come, he was dying there, give it to him, will they go there?, he has been killed, do you know it?, do you know him?, they would have lost it, they ought to have opened it, he could not persuade him, it pleased him, I put it there, they made me read it, we shall remain there, it seemed to them, they have seen us, tell it to me, they wish it.*

4. *Study these sentences:* 1. Mi rispóse di sì,¹ e che ci avrèbbe móltò piacére. 2. Lúi piangéva piangéva, e gli áltri stávano zítti a guardárlo. 3. Sedévan attórno álla távolà, impaziénti che si servísse la colazíone. 4. Môrto, le párve assái più gránde e buônó che non le fósse mái pársò vívo. 5. Finalmènte riuscì a fárselo restituíre. 6. Gli abitánti si rifugiávano su per i mónti, portándovi quel che avévan di mèglio.² 7. Nel succédersi dégli avveniménti in mèzzo ai quálí veníva innalzáto al sôglio, párve manifestársi la máno délla Provvidênça. 8. Prevedéva di dovérsene tornáre a cásá, di lì a pôchi giórni, pôvero com'éra venúto. 9. Che mólti di quéis têmi esistéssero néllea poesía più antíca, ci páre pienaménte dimostráto. 10. Se li pérdo, che sarà di me? 11. Le stáva davánti, quásí aspettásse che gli dicéssè d'andársene. 12. Quéste pôche páginas póstas in princípio serviránno di introduzíone a tútto il libro. 13. Decíse di sentíre tranquillamente ciò che állo zío piacéssesse d'aggiúngere. 14. Si trásse dal díto l'anello mágico, e se lo misé in boccá. 15. Adéssò le spiegherò, mèglio ch'io non facéssi allóra, che côsa vogliámo fáre. 16. Non pôsso non fárlo, nè vorrêi, ánche potêndo, non fárlo. 17. Úna società che si fórmì così dêve finíre con l'êsser compósta di ribélli. 18. Parlerémo prima di lúi, non perchè égli sia il più antíco, ma perchè è il più importânte. 19. Nor si êrano mái accôrti délle occhiáte di ammirazíone con cui lúi li guardáva. 20. Alcúni contadíni, credêndo che cercásse déi tesóri, e persuási che avésse già qualche côsa di prezioso in tásca, gli si avvicinárono per accertársene.

¹ *di sì*, 'that he would.'

² *quel che avévan di mèglio*, 'the best of their belongings.'

5. *Translate into Italian:* 1. He told me that he had desired it for many years. 2. I should not have believed that you had spoken of it to him. 3. If I'm not mistaken, we shall be there in a few minutes. 4. I am surprised that they haven't called you yet. 5. I know him only by (*di*) sight; I have seen him several times in the Public Gardens. 6. The prisoner has¹ escaped and has hidden himself in the wood; the peasants are protecting him. 7. I was sure of it, although her face did not betray any surprise. 8. Did they tell you when they would come to your house? 9. We could have given it to you, if we had known that you wanted it. 10. It isn't impossible that he has seen it, but I don't believe so.

¹ Translate by the proper form of *essere*.

LESSON 41. OLD AND POETIC FORMS

Study section 3 (f) on p. 7, the second footnote on p. 11, the second footnote on p. 17, section 44 (a), the first footnote on p. 35, section 48 (e), the footnote on p. 39, section 63 (d), section 68, the forms given in section 92 in parentheses and footnotes, the verbs numbered 23 and 169, and those among nos. 24-125 that are marked Rare or Poetical; also the verbs *gíre* and *íre* given on p. 94.

EXERCISE 41

1. Give the modern prose equivalents of: *lo giórno*, *i capéi*, *tái re*, *ne¹ párla*, *mel díce*, *nol crédo*, *sen va*, *amería*, *parlería*, *parlâro*, *parlerêbbono*, *parlôe*, *párle*, *parlâr*, *cómpro*,² *sentío*, *fénno*, *fésté*, *fáce*, *diéro*, *áve*, *avéa*, *aviêno*, *ággia*, *arà*, *êi*, *cágiano*, *dêe*, *dênnó*, *il véggo*, *vôlsi*, *puôte*, *pônno*, *poría*, *ênnó*, *súto*, *sête*, *fóra*, *fóro*, *fía*, *chiêrgo*, *côrre*, *tôrre*, *piágne*, *vêgna*.

¹ Do not regard this *ne* as meaning 'of it.'

² Do not regard this form as present indicative.

2. Study these lines:

1. *Or fía ch' éi vêgna sólo? Áhi, mèglio fóra!*
2. *Udrássi allór chi puôte il ver narráre.*
3. *Môrte êmmi il gíre, e il rimanér m' è môrte.*
4. *Stávvi sêmpre — nol sái? — cúi stárví líce.*
5. *Tôrmeli crédi? Chi diêtti tal fôrza?*

6. La pátria amâr; liêti per lêi morîro.
7. Il véggio, o pármi, coí fratêi veníre.
8. Qual fuggitívo non vorría mostrármì.
9. “O felíci costór!” paréane díre.
10. “Lasciár ti dêbbo” pôi sen gía cantândo.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES IN PRONUNCIATION

A

Acácia, accecáre, acciáio, acquaiuôlo, aggiúngere, áhi, allégro, ami-cízia, archibúgio, artigliería, bicchiére, bigliéttò, Boccáccio, Boiárdo, bugía, búio, buôi, canzóne, Cardúcci, cascággi, Castiglióne, caval-lería, Cellíni, céncio, cêntottantôtto, cérchio, Checchína, chiácchiere, chiaroscúro, Chiôggia, cicatríce, cíglia, cinquecênto, Civitavêcchia, côgliere, corággio, corridóio, costituzionále, crescêndo, cugíno, cuôcere, dolcézza, dóppio, dúnque, echeffiáre, faccione, fasciáre, fazzolétto, fiôcchi, físcio, flôscio, Fogazzáro, Francésco, fruscio, fuorchè, góio, ghiáccio, ghiáia, Ghirlandáio, giacíglia, ginôcchio, giôia, Giórgio, Gírgenti, giudízio, grígio, guái, guêrra, Guído Guinizêlli, hái, hánno, ho, ignôbile, incôgnito, inginocchiatóio, inscioglíbile, iridescênça, Itália, laggiù, larghézza, lenzuôlo, letteratúra, líscio, luccichò, Machia-vêlli, menzógna, merciáio, Michelângelo Buonarrôti, minchionería, negôzio, Niccolò, noiáltri, occhiácci, ocêano, orécchio, ossía, Pagliácci, Palêrmo, paziêenza, Petrárca, piázza, pieghevolezza, Pintorícchio, Poliziáno, Pollaiuôlo, Pozzuôli, può, quâcquero, quaggiù, quégli, ricchézza, richiamiámo, risuscitaté, ruôta, Sacchétta, sbêrcio, scé-gliere, schermísce, schérzo, schiamázzo, sciaguráto, sciôgliere, sciupacchiáre, scricchioliò, sdraiáto, sdrúcciolo, Sfôrza, sghêrro, Sicília, singhiózzo, slânciano, squarciagôla, stizzísce, súdicio, tázza, tréccia, tribù; úggia, uguále, uôvo, usciámo, vêcchio, viággio.

B

Un mío amíco raccontáva úna scêna curiosa álla quâle êra státo presente in cása di un giûdice di páce in Milâno, mólti ánni fa. Lo avéva trováto tra dûe litigânti, úno déi quâli peroráva caldaménte la sua cáusa; e quando costúi êbbe finítio, il giûdice gli dísse: “Avéte ragióne.”

“Ma, signór giúdice,” dísse súbito l’ áltro, “lêi mi dêve sentíre ánche me, prima di decídere.”

“È trôppo giústo,”¹ rispôse il giúdice, “díté pur su,² che v’ ascolto attêntaménte.”

Allóra quéllo si míse con tanto piû impégno a far valére la sua cáusa, e ci riuscì cosi bêne che il giúdice gli dísse: “Avéte ragióne ánche voi.”

C’ êra lì accânto³ un suo bambino di sétte o ôtto ánni, il quale, giocândo pián piáno con non so qual balôccio, non avéva lasciato di stáre ánche attênto álla discussióne, e a quel punto, alzando un visíno stupefátto, esclamò: “Ma bábbo, non può êssere che ábbiano ragióne tutt’ e dúe.”

“Hái ragióne ánche tu,” gli dísse il giúdice.

MANZÓNI.

¹ È trôppo giústo, ‘That’s only fair.’

² díté pur su, ‘go ahead.’

³ accânto, ‘in the room with them.’

C

Che sía il Píncio nell’ óra che sul ponênte colór d’arâncio si dipíngue la gigantésca ómbra di San Piêtro e del Vaticâno, non c’ è língua che pôssa díre. È un incânto, un’ êstasi, un sórgo, è un confuso viavái d’ immênsi pensiéri, è un tumûltu di memôrie grandiôse e di sperânze árcane, in cui la mente si pérde, cóme in un máre sêenza confíni. Guardândo il Gianícolo e Mônte Mário, che stârno in fáccia, par di vedere nel fondo dell’ angûsta vallâta passár silenziósi i sécoli fra le nébbie délla séra, e un brívido córre per le ôssa, cóme se da quel fondo si rizzassero taciturni e cúpi gli spêttri dei grândi, che résero temuta e sacra álle gênti questa têrra fatâle. Quêsto píccolo spázio, che lo sguárdo abbraccia sêenza fatíca, è il punto piû stôrico di tutto il móndo. Tutta la civiltà antica s’ è condensâta fra questi côlli, e di qui, risalêndo il Têvere, s’ è distesa a conquistâr la maggiór parte délla têrra conosciûta. Di qui môssero gli esérciti invasóri, qui ne fûrono celebrâti i triónfi, di qui si propagárono le lêggi e la língua che

fécero di gran pártē déllo stermináto impêro un pôpulo sólo. Quândo pôi i vínti si ribellárono, la non vínta regína soggiogò cólle speránze di un' áltra víta tútti colóro che ricusávano il suo domínio in quésta; e in nóme di Crísto risollevò l' impêro cadúto. Poichè le fûreron strappáte di máno le ármi, regnò disarmáta: ricuperò con un áltero vessillo la coróna perdúta, nè fu méno grânde e potênte di prima. E l' emblêma di quésta stôria, nôdo déi têmpi anterióri e déi succésivi, è là sótto gli ôcchi: un obelisco egiziâno, portáto in Rôma dagl' imperatóri români e sormontáto dâlla crôce, compêndia la stôria di tútta la civiltà.

GABELLI.

NOTE ON READING ITALIAN VERSE

In reading Italian verse the verbal stress is the same as in prose. There is no such artificial shifting of the stress as in Latin scansion.

Two adjacent vowels in the same word are usually to be pronounced as belonging to the same syllable, the voice gliding quickly from the first vowel to the second. They are however to be pronounced as belonging to separate syllables (1) when the first is *a*, *e*, or *o* and the second is stressed; (2) when the first of the two vowels is the last stressed vowel of the line; (3) in some other cases (there is one instance in Exercise E, line 4: *trionfâle*).

Two vowels standing one at the end of a word and the other at the beginning of the next word and not separated by a mark of punctuation are usually to be pronounced, also, as belonging to the same syllable. (There are no exceptions in these exercises. Exceptions occur when the first of the two vowels is stressed or is immediately preceded by a stressed vowel, and in some other cases.) If the two vowels are different, the voice glides quickly from the first to the second; if they are identical, they are pronounced as a single long vowel.

Two adjacent vowels separated by a mark of pronunciation are to be pronounced as belonging to separate syllables; though as a matter of technical versification they are arbitrarily reckoned as belonging to the same syllable, unless they are of one of the types referred to as exceptional.

D

Lúngo la stráda vedi su la siêpe
rídere a mázzi le vermíglie bácche:
nei cámpi aráti tórnano al presépe
tárde le vácche.

Vién per la stráda un pôvero che il lênto
pásso tra fôglie strídule trascína:
nei cámpi intuôna una fanciúlla al vênto:

Fiôre di spína! . . .

PÁSCOLI.

Line 1. *su la*: the prepositions which normally contract with a following definite article are in verse often uncontracted.

4. *tárde* is a predicate adjective used with adverbial force: ‘slowly.’
intuôna: see section 59 (b).

8. *Fiôre di spína*: these are the first words of a peasant song.

E

Liêvi e biánche a la plâga occidentále
Ván le núbi: a le víe ríde e su 'l fôro
Úmido il ciêlo, ed a l' umán lavóro
Salúta il sól, benírgno, trionfále.

Lêva in rôseo fulgór la cattedrále
Le mille gúglie biánche e i sânti d' ôro,
Osannândo irraggiáta: intórno, il côro
Brûno de' fálchi ágita i grídi e l' ále.

Tál, poi ch' amór co 'l dólce ríso vía
Ráse le núbi che gravârmi tánto,
Si rilêva nel sól l' ânima mía,

E moltéplice a lêi sorríde il sânto
Ideál de la víta: è un' armonía
Ógni pensiêro, ed ógni sênso un cánto.

CARDÚCCI.

Line 2. *'l* is a form of *il* often used in verse.

10. *Ráse* is a past absolute used with the force of a present perfect:
'has swept.' — *gravârmi*: see section 68 (d).

ITALIAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY

This vocabulary contains all Italian words appearing in exercise sections involving translation from the Italian and all words appearing in Exercises B-E on pp. 150-153, with the following exceptions: articles, cardinal and ordinal numerals, possessive and personal pronouns, and words occurring only in the following exercise sections: Ex. 28 sect. 2 Ex. 30 sect. 2, Ex. 31 sect. 1, Ex. 34 sect. 1, Ex. 35 sect. 1, Ex. 36 sect. 1, Ex. 39 sect. 1. The meanings of all words occurring in these sections are given in the portions of the Grammar assigned for the lessons in question. The irregular verb forms occurring in Exercises B-E (except the forms of *avére* and *éssere*) are separately entered here.

The position of the secondary stress is indicated only in words in which it falls upon an open e or o.

Nouns ending in o are masculine and those ending in a are feminine, unless indication to the contrary is given.

A

a, to, toward, at, in, on, upon, for, by, of; **a fáre**, doing, if one does; **al fáre**, on doing, when one does.

abbracciáre, to embrace.

abitánte, *m.*, inhabitant.

ábito, coat.

accadére, to happen.

accánto, — a, beside.

accattáre, to beg.

accertársi, to make certain.

accôgliere, to welcome.

accôrgersi di, to notice.

accúsa, accusation.

áqua, water.

addío, good-by.

adêssو, now.

affáre, *m.*, affair.

affátto, entirely.

afferráre, to seize.

afféttó, affection.

África, Africa.

aggiúngere, to add.

agitáre, to agitate, wave.

ah, ah; **ah sì?**, is that so?

áhi, ah.

aiutáre, to help.

aiúto, help.

ála, wing.

álbero, tree.

alcúno, some; *pron.*, anyone.

alloggiáre, to lodge.

allóra, then; **da — in pôi**, thereafter.

alméno, at least.

áltó, high, tall; **in —**, high up.

altriménti, otherwise.

áltro, other; **l' úno e l' —**, both.

alzáre, to raise; **alzáto**, up.

amáre, to love, be fond of.

Améríca, America.

amicízia, friendship.

amíco, friend.

ammalársi, to fall sick.

ammirazíone, *f.*, admiration.

amóre, *m.*, love.

ánchez, also, too, even, at the same time.

ancóra, still, yet, again, even, more.

- andáre**, to go; **andársene**, to go off or away; **va fátto così**, it must be done so.
- anêllo**, ring.
- angústo**, narrow.
- ânimâ**, soul.
- ârno**, year; **di dûe ânni**, two years old; **avére dûe ânni**, to be two years old.
- anteriôre**, former.
- antîco**, ancient, old.
- ânzi**, even, rather, on the contrary.
- apparíre**, to appear.
- appéna**, scarcely, as soon as.
- applaudíre**, to applaud.
- apríre**, **aprírsi**, to open.
- arâncio**, orange.
- arâre**, to plough.
- arcâno**, secret.
- âria**, air; **avér l'** —, to seem.
- Ariôsto**, Ariosto.
- ârmi**, *f. pl.*, arms.
- armonía**, harmony.
- arrivâre**, to arrive, get; — *a*, to reach.
- ascoltâre**, to listen, listen to.
- aspettâre**, to wait, wait for, expect.
- aspêrto**, aspect, appearance.
- assái**, enough, very, considerably, much.
- assênte**, absent.
- attêntamênte**, attentively.
- attênto**, attentive, careful.
- âtto**, act, attitude.
- attôrno**, — *a*, around.
- augurâre**, to wish.
- aurôra**, dawn.
- austriaco**, Austrian.
- automôbile**, *m.*, automobile.
- autôre**, *m.*, author.
- autúnno**, autumn.
- avânti**, forward, come in.
- avére**, to have, possess, hold; **ho da**, I have to, I must. Other idioms in which **avére** appears are registered only under the other words concerned.
- avvenimênto**, event.
- avveníre**, to happen; *n. m.*, future.
- avvertíre**, to warn.
- avvicinârsi a**, to approach.
- avvísio**, warning.
- avvocâto**, lawyer.
- azióne**, *f.*, action.
- azzûrro**, blue.

B

- bâbbo**, papa.
- bâcca**, berry.
- badâre**, to notice, take care, pay attention.
- balôcco**, toy.
- bambíno**, child, small boy.
- bastâre**, to be enough, suffice.
- battâglia**, battle.
- bâtttere**, to beat, strike.
- baûle**, *m.*, trunk.
- bêllo**, beautiful, fair, handsome, pretty, fine.
- benchè**, although.
- bêne**, well; *n. m.*, good thing, happiness; **far** —, to do good.
- benedíre**, to bless.
- benigno**, benign.
- beníssimo**, very well.
- bére**, to drink.
- biánco**, white.
- biasimâre**, to blame, condemn.
- bicchiêre**, *m.*, glass.
- bigliétto**, ticket, bill.
- biliárdo**, billiards.
- bióndo**, blond, golden.

bisognâre, to be necessary.
bisôgno, need; *avér — di*, to need.
bócca, mouth.
bottóne, *m.*, button.
bráccio, arm.
brívido, shudder.
bruciáre, to burn.
brúno, brown, dark.
búio, dark; *n.*, darkness.
buôno, good.

C

cadére, to fall.
caffè, *m.*, coffee.
caláre, to sink, set.
caldaménte, warmly, eagerly.
cálido, hot, warm.
cambiáre, to change.
cámera, room.
caminétto, fireplace.
camíno, chimney.
cámpo, field.
cantáre, to sing.
cánto (1), song.
cánto (2), corner.
capéollo, hair.
capíre, to understand.
capitoláre, to capitulate, surrender.
capítolo, chapter.
cappélla, chapel.
cappêllo, hat.
caráttore, *m.*, character.
cárico, laden.
cárne, *f.*, meat.
cáro, dear.
cárta, paper.
cása, house, home.
cattedrále, *f.*, cathedral.
cattívo, bad.
cáusa, cause, case.

cêdere, to yield.
celebráre, to celebrate.
centêsimo, centime.
centináio, hundred.
cêntro, centre.
cercáre, to seek, search, look for, try.
cêrto, certain; *per —*, for a certainty.
che, *conj.*, that, because, and, than; *fátto — êbbe*, when he had made; *êcco —*, suddenly; **non —**, to say nothing of; **se non —**, if . . . not, but; **non . . . —**, only; *pôi —*, when; **sì — è buôno**, it's very good indeed; **o —**, used without translatable force to introduce a question.
che, *pron.*, what, what a, who, which, that, when; — **côsa**, what; **ciò —**, **quello —**, what, that; **un non so — di buôno**, something good, a certain goodness.
chi, who, he who, one who, if anyone; — . . . —, some . . . others; *di —*, whose.
chiamáre, to call; **côme si chiáma?**, what is the name of?
chiáro, clear, bright.
chiáve, *f.*, key.
chiêdere, to ask.
chiêsa, church.
chiûdere, to close, shut.
ci, here, there, in it; often pleonastic.
ciêco, blind; *n.*, blind man.
ciêlo, sky, heaven.
ciò, that; — **che**, what, that.
cioè, that is.

| | |
|--|--|
| città, city. | conversazioné, <i>f.</i> , conversation. |
| cittadino, citizen. | corággio, courage; <i>da far</i> —, encouraging. |
| civiltà, civilization. | côro, choir. |
| clássico, classic. | corôna, crown. |
| co 'l, <i>poetic</i> , = col. | coronâre, to crown. |
| côdice, <i>m.</i> , manuscript. | côrrere, to run, overrun. |
| côgliere, to gather. | côrte, <i>f.</i> , court. |
| colazióne, <i>f.</i> , lunch. | cortesía, courtesy. |
| côlle, <i>m.</i> , hill. | côrto, short. |
| colôre, <i>m.</i> , color; — d' arâncio, orange-colored. | côsa, thing, what; <i>che</i> —, what; <i>ha quâlche</i> — di buôno, there is something good about it. |
| colôro, those. | così, so, such. |
| colûi, he. | costâre, to cost. |
| combâtttere, to fight. | côsto, cost. |
| côme, how, as, like. | costôro, they. |
| cominciâre, to begin. | costûi, he. |
| compagnia, company. | crédere, to believe, think. |
| compendiâre, to sum up. | crêscere, to grow, increase. |
| compiacérsi, to take pleasure. | cristiâno, Christian. |
| compíre, to complete, finish. | Cristo, Christ. |
| compliménto, compliment. | crôce, <i>f.</i> , cross. |
| compôrre, to compose. | crudeltà, cruelty. |
| comprâre, to buy. | cucíre, to sew; mácchina da —, sewing-machine. |
| con, with, by, in, on, to. | cugína, cousin. |
| concêdere, to concede, grant. | cugíno, cousin. |
| condensâre, to condense, concentrate. | cúi, whom, which, to which, he to whom. |
| condûrre, to lead. | cuôre, <i>m.</i> , heart. |
| confettî, <i>m. pl.</i> , candy. | cúpo, gloomy. |
| confíne, <i>m.</i> , limit. | cûra, care. |
| confôndere, to confuse. | curiôso, curious. |
| conoscênça, acquaintance. | |
| conôscere, to know, make the acquaintance of, recognize. | |
| conquistâre, to conquer. | D |
| consiglio, counsel. | |
| contadíno, peasant. | da, from, by, for, with, to, of, as, like, such as to; <i>da lontâno</i> , in the distance; <i>da prêssو</i> , near; <i>da mangiare</i> , something <i>or</i> anything to eat. |
| contentâre, to content, satisfy. | |
| continuâre, to continue. | |
| contínuo, continual. | |
| côntro, — di, against. | |

| | |
|--|---|
| Dânte, <i>m.</i> , Dante. | divertire, to divert, amuse. |
| dáre, to give, devote; — del, to call; dársi per vínto, to give in. | dividere, to divide. |
| datâre, to date. | divíno, divine. |
| davânti, — a, before, in front of. | dólce, sweet. |
| decídere, to decide. | dolére, to pain. |
| decisióne, <i>f.</i> , decision. | domandâre, to ask, ask for. |
| denâro, money. | domâni, tomorrow. |
| déntro, within, in. | doménica, Sunday. |
| desiderâbile, desirable. | domínio, dominion. |
| desiderâre, to desire. | dôrnia, woman. |
| desidêrio, desire. | dôno, gift. |
| destíno, destiny. | dópo, after, afterward, since. |
| dêstra, right hand, right. | dormíre, to sleep. |
| dêve, 3rd sing. pres. ind. of dovére. | dóve, where. |
| di, of, about, with, from, by, in, to, than, as; dáre del, to call; díre di sì, to say 'yes'; al di là di, beyond; del páne, some bread. | dovére, to owe, be obliged; dêvo, I am to, I have to, I must; dovrêi, I ought to. |
| diávolo, devil. | dúro, hard. |
| diêtro, — a, behind. | |
| difêtto, defect. | |
| diffícile, difficult. | |
| difficoltà, difficulty, trouble. | |
| dimenticâre, to forget. | E |
| dimostrâre, to demonstrate, prove. | e, and, both; le dûe e diêci, ten minutes past two; più . . . e più, the more . . . the more. |
| dipíngere, to paint. | |
| díre, to say, tell; — di sì, to say 'yes'; volér —, to mean. | êcco, here is, there is; — che, suddenly. |
| disarmâto, unarmed. | ed, and. |
| discussióne, <i>f.</i> , discussion. | egiziâno, Egyptian. |
| disgrâzia, misfortune. | êh, eh. |
| dispiacâre, to displease; mi spiáce, I'm sorry, I don't like. | elêggere, to elect. |
| dísse, 3rd sing. past abs. of díre. | emblêma, <i>m.</i> , emblem. |
| distêndere, to distend; refl., to reach out. | energía, energy. |
| disteso, <i>pp.</i> of distêndere. | entrâre, to enter, go in, get in, come in. |
| distinguere, to distinguish. | esagerâre, to exaggerate. |
| dítâ, 2d pl. inv. of díre. | esâme, <i>m.</i> , examination. |
| dítô, finger. | esclamâre, to exclaim. |

êst, *m.*, east.
 êstasi, *f.*, ecstasy.
 età, age.
 Eurôpa, Europe.

F

facchíno, porter.

fáccia, face; *di —, in —*, opposite.

fácil, easy.

fálco, falcon.

falsità, falseness.

falso, false.

fâme, *f.*, hunger.

fanciúlla, girl.

fanciúllo, boy, child.

fantásma, *m.*, phantom.

fâre, to do, make, have, let, take, say, be, act, serve as; *refl.*, to become, get; lascia — a me, leave it to me; dólce — niênte, sweet idleness; sul — di, toward; fa, ago. *Other idioms in which fâre appears are registered only under the other words concerned.*

fatále, hateful.

fatíca, fatigue, difficulty.

fatto, fact.

favôre, *m.*, favor.

febbraio, February.

fêbre, *f.*, fever.fécero, *3rd pl. past abs. of fâre.*

felice, happy.

feríre, to wound.

férmox, firm, certain.

férro, iron.

figlio, son.

filáre, to spin.

filosofía, philosophy.

finalmênte, finally, at last.

finchê, as long as, until; — . . . non, until.

fíne, *f.*, end.
 finêstra, window.
 fíngere, to feign; fínto, fictitious.
 finíre, to finish, end; — coll' andâre, finally to go.

fíno a, until.

fiôre, *m.*, flower.fioríno, florin, *an obsolete coin worth about \$2.50.*Firênze, *f.*, Florence.fiúme, *m.*, river.

fôglia, leaf.

fólto, thick.

fondâre, to found.

fôndo, depth, trough, hollow, basis.

fontâna, fountain.

forestière, *m.*, foreigner, stranger.

formâre, to form.

forníre, to furnish; — di, to give.

fôro, forum, market place.

fôrse, perhaps.

fôrte, strong.

fortézza, fort.

fortunâto, fortunate.

fôrza, force, strength; con —, hard.

fotografía, photograph.

fra, between, among, amid, through.

francêse, French.

frásca, bush.

fráse, *f.*, sentence.

fratêllo, brother.

fréddo, cold; fâre —, to be cold.

frétta, haste.

frútto, fruit.

fuggíre, to flee.

fuggitívo, fugitive.

fulgóre, *m.*, glow.

fumâre, to smoke.

fuôco, fire.

fuorchê, except.

G

- gallería, gallery.
 garantíre, to guarantee.
 gênte, *f.*, people, nation.
 gentile, gentle, polite, kind.
 già, already.
 giacére, to lie.
 giállo, yellow.
 Gianícolo, Janiculum.
 giardíno, garden.
 gigantéscò, gigantic.
 ginôcchio, knee.
 giocáre, to play.
 giôdia, joy.
 giornále, *m.*, journal, newspaper.
 giôrno, day; per —, daily.
 gióvane, young; *n. m.*, young man.
 Giovânni, *m.*, John.
 giôvine, young.
 giovinézza, youth.
 giráre, to whirl.
 gíre, *poetical*, to go; gírsene, to go away.
 gítà, trip, excursion.
 giudicáre, to judge.
 giûdice, *m.*, judge, justice.
 giúngere, to join, clasp; — a, to reach.
 giuráre, to swear.
 giústo, just, fair.
 godére, to enjoy.
 governáre, to govern.
 grânde, great, large, big; *n. m.*, great man; fâre un — fréddo, to be very cold.
 grandiôso, grand.
 gravâre, to weigh down, oppress.
 graveménte, gravely, seriously.
 grázia, favor; *pl.*, thanks.
 grído, cry.
 guadagnáre, to earn, gain, win.

- guánto, glove.

- guardáre, to look, look at, watch
 gúglia, pinnacle.

I

- idêa, idea.
 ideále, *m.*, ideal.
 iêri, yesterday.
 illúdere, to deceive.
 illustríssimo, excellency.
 immêndo, immense.
 imparáre, to learn.
 impaziênte, impatient.
 impedíre, to hinder.
 impégno, pledge, earnestness.
 imperatôre, *m.*, emperor.
 impêro, empire.
 importânte, important.
 impossíble, impossible.
 in, in, at, to; da allôra in pôi, thereafter.
 incânto, enchantment.
 inchíno, bow.
 incontráre, to meet.
 indoráre, to gild.
 indûrre, to induce, lead.
 inêrzia, inertia.
 infâtti, in fact.
 ingegnâre, *m.*, engineer.
 Inghiltêrra, England.
 inginocchiôni, kneeling.
 innalzâre, to raise.
 insegnâre, to teach.
 insiême, together.
 interessânte, interesting.
 interêsse, *m.*, interest.
 intonâre, to intone, start singing.
 intórno, round about.
 introduziône, *f.*, introduction.
 inútile, useless.

| | |
|---|--|
| invasóre, <i>m.</i> , invader; <i>adj.</i> , invading. | lúngo, <i>adj.</i> , long. |
| invéce, instead. | lúngo, <i>prep.</i> , along. |
| invérno, winter. | luôgo, place. |
| invisíbile, invisible. | |
| íra, anger. | M |
| irraggiáto, radiant. | ma, but. |
| irrequiéto, anxious. | máccchina, machine. |
| Itália, Italy. | mádre, <i>f.</i> , mother. |
| italiáno, Italian. | maggióre, greater. |
| | mágico, magic. |
| | mái, never, ever; <i>non . . . —,</i> never. |
| | maláto, sick. |
| là, there; <i>al di là di</i> , beyond. | malattía, sickness, trouble. |
| lágo, lake. | mále, badly, ill; <i>n. m.</i> , harm, ill; <i>far —</i> , to hurt. |
| lágrima, tear. | mandáre, to send. |
| lasciáre, to leave, let, fail; <i>láschia fáre a me</i> , leave it to me. | mangiáre, to eat. |
| látte, <i>m.</i> , milk. | maniéra, manner. |
| lavoráre, to work. | manifestáre, to manifest. |
| lavóro, labor, work. | máno, <i>f.</i> , hand. |
| légge, <i>f.</i> , law. | máre, <i>m.</i> , sea. |
| lêggere, to read. | María, Mary. |
| lênto, slow, quiet, gentle. | Mário, <i>proper name</i> . |
| lêttera, letter. | matíta, pencil. |
| leváre, to raise, rise. | mattína, morning. |
| lezióne, <i>f.</i> , lesson. | mázzo, cluster. |
| lì, there; <i>di lì a</i> , within. | médico, doctor. |
| libertà, liberty, freedom. | medioevále, mediaeval. |
| líbro, book. | Mediterráneo, Mediterranean. |
| lícere, <i>poetical</i> , to be permitted. | méglia, better, best. |
| liêto, glad. | méla, apple. |
| liêve, light. | memória, memory. |
| língua, tongue, language. | menáre, to lead, take. |
| líra, lira, <i>a coin worth about 20 cents.</i> | ménos, less; <i>le dûe — diêci</i> , ten minutes of two; <i>non potére a — di non</i> , not to be able to help; <i>i —</i> , the minority. |
| litigánte, <i>m.</i> , litigant. | ménte, <i>f.</i> , mind; <i>veníre in —</i> , to occur. |
| lontáno, distant, far; <i>da —</i> , in the distance. | méntre, while. |
| lúme, <i>m.</i> , light. | |
| lunedì, Monday. | |

meravigliare, to surprise.

mercáto, market.

mescoláre, to mingle.

mése, *m.*, month.

metà, half.

métttere, to put, set; *refl.*, to begin.

mêzzo, half; **in — a**, amid; **fíno a —**, until the middle of; **le dûe e —**, half past two.

mézzogiorno, noon; **dópo —**, P. M.

míca: non . . . —, not.

Michelángelo, Michelangelo.

miglióre, better, best.

Miláno, *f.*, Milan.

minacciáre, to threaten.

minaccióso, threatening.

míse, *3rd sing. past abs. of méttere*.

misterióso, mysterious.

modérno, modern.

móglie, *f.*, wife.

moltéplice, manifold.

moltíssimo, very much, a great deal of.

mólto, much, very much; *adv.*, much, very; **far — mále**, to hurt badly.

moménto, moment.

móndo, world; **non sapére in che — si sía**, not to know where one

is, to be completely bewildered.

montáre, to mount, go up.

mónte, *m.*, mountain, mount.

moríre, to die.

mormorío, murmur.

môrte, *f.*, death.

môssero, *3rd pl. past abs. of muôvere*.

mostráre, to show; *refl.*, to appear.

múcchio, pile.

muôvere, to move, start.

múro, wall.

N

Nápoli, *f.*, Naples.

narráre, to narrate, tell.

náscere, to be born or formed.

Natále, *m.*, Christmas.

nazióne, *f.*, nation.

ne, thence; **andársene**, to go off or away.

nè, nor, neither; **non . . . nè . . . nè**, neither . . . nor.

neánche, **non . . . —**, not even.

nébbia, mist.

necessário, necessary.

negáre, to deny, refuse.

nemíco, enemy.

nemménico, **non . . . —**, not even.

néro, black.

nessúno, no one; **non . . . —**, not anyone.

néve, *f.*, snow.

nido, nest.

niénte, **non . . . —**, nothing, not anything; **dólce far —**, sweet idleness.

no, no, not.

nôdo, knot, link.

nóme, *m.*, name.

non, not, no; **— . . . che, — . . . se —**, only; **— che**, to say nothing of; **se —**, except; **se — che**, if . . . not, but; **più . . . che —**, more than; **— potére —**, not to be able to avoid or fail; **— potére a méno di —**, not to be able to help; **un — so che di buôno**, something good, a certain goodness; **— so quâle**, some . . . or other.

nondiméno, nevertheless.

nônonna, grandmother.

notizia, notice, news.

nôtte, *f.*, night.

nûbe, *f.*, cloud.

nûlla, non . . . —, nothing.

número, number.

nuôcere, to hurt.

nuôvo, new; *che c' è di —?*, what's the news?

O

o, *conj.*, or, either.

o, *interj.*, O; **o che**, used without translatable force to introduce a question.

obbligâre, to oblige.

obelisco, obelisk.

occasiône, *f.*, occasion.

occhiâli, *m. pl.*, glasses.

occhiâta, glance.

ôcchio, eye.

occidentâle, western.

occupâre, to occupy.

ôdio, hatred.

offrîre, to offer.

ôggi, today.

ógni, every.

ôh, oh.

ômbra, shadow.

ombrêllo, umbrella.

onorâre, to honor.

onôre, *m.*, honor.

ôpera, work.

operâio, workman.

opiniône, *f.*, opinion.

ôra, *adv.*, now; **or —**, just.

ôra, *n.*, hour, time.

ôrfano, orphan.

ôro, gold.

osannâre, to sing hosanna.

ôssو, bone.

oziôso, idle.

P

páce, *f.*, peace.

pâdre, *m.*, father.

padrône, *m.*, master.

pagâre, to pay.

página, page.

palâzzo, palace.

pâllido, pale.

pâne, *m.*, bread.

panière, *m.*, basket.

parére, to seem, appear.

parlâre, to speak.

parôla, word.

párte, *f.*, part.

partíre, to depart, leave; — *di*, to leave.

partíta, match, game.

passâre, to pass.

pâsso, step.

patêrno, of one's parents.

pátria, fatherland.

paúra, fear.

pâusa, pause.

paziênsa, patience.

peccâto, sin; *interj.*, too bad.

péna, trouble.

pénna, pen.

pensâre, to think.

pensiêro, thought.

pentírsi, to repent.

per, for, through, along, in, on, as,

as for; — **quânto sía buônô**.

good as it is; **stâre —**, to be about to.

péra, pear.

perchê, why, because, in order that; *n. m.*, reason.

pêrdere, to lose.

| | |
|---|---|
| perfettamente , perfectly, exactly. | ponente , <i>m.</i> , west. |
| pericolo , danger. | ponte , <i>m.</i> , bridge. |
| permettere , to permit, allow. | pêpolo , people. |
| però , however, though. | pôrre , to put, place, send. |
| perorare , to plead. | pôrta , door. |
| persuadere , to persuade, convince. | portare , to carry, bring, take, show. |
| pêscce , <i>m.</i> , fish. | pôssa , <i>3rd sing. pres. subj. of potere</i> . |
| pêzzo , piece. | possibile , possible. |
| piacere , to please; <i>n. m.</i> , pleasure, favor; avér —, to be glad; mi piace , I like. | pôsto , place. |
| piangere , to weep, cry, weep for. | potente , powerful. |
| piano , smooth, slow; <i>adv.</i> , softly, quietly. | potere , to be able; pôsso , I can, I may; non — non , not to be able to avoid or fail; non — a meno di non , not to be able to help. |
| picchiare , to knock. | poveretta , poor woman. |
| piccolo , little, small. | poveretto , poor fellow. |
| piêde , <i>m.</i> , foot; a piêdi , on foot. | pôvero , poor; <i>n.</i> , poor man. |
| piênamente , fully. | prânzo , dinner. |
| pieno , full. | praticare , to practice, associate. |
| pietà , pity. | preferir e, to prefer. |
| Piêtro , Peter. | preghiera , prayer, entreaty. |
| pigliare , to take, catch. | prêmere , to press. |
| Píncio , Pincian Hill. | prêndere , prêndersi , to take. |
| pistola , pistol. | presentar e, to present. |
| pittore , <i>m.</i> , painter. | presênte , present. |
| pittura , painting. | presêpe , <i>m.</i> , stable. |
| più , more, most, longer, again; — ... e —, the more . . . the more; non . . . —, not, no, not any; i —, the majority. | prêsso , da —, near. |
| piuttôsto , rather. | prestâr e, to lend. |
| plága , sky. | prêsto , quickly, soon, early. |
| po' , abbreviated form of pôco . | pretêndere , to expect. |
| pochissimo , very little. | preveder e, to foresee. |
| pôco , little, a little. | preziôso , valuable. |
| poesía , poetry, poem. | prêzzo , price. |
| poêta , <i>m.</i> , poet. | prîma , first, before; — di , -- che , before. |
| pôi , then; da allôra in —, there- after; — che , when. | princípio , beginning. |
| poichè , after. | profôndo , deep, low. |
| pôlso , pulse. | proibir e, to forbid. |

prometttere, to promise.
 pronto, ready, quick.
 propagare, to spread abroad.
 proseguire, to continue.
 protégere, to protect, patronize.
 provvidenza, providence.
 pubblicare, to publish.
 punto, point; *adv.*, at all.
 può, 3rd sing. pres. ind. of potere.
 purchè, provided that, if only.
 pure, yet, just; — troppo, unfortunately.

Q

quadro, picture.
 qualche, some, a few; ha — cosa
 di buono, there is something
 good about it.
 qualcheduno, someone.
 qualcosa, something.
 quale, which, what, as; il —, who,
 which; non so —, some . . . or
 other.
 qualità, quality.
 quando, when.
 quanto, how much, as much, as
 much as, all that, that, as; per
 — sia buono, good as it is.
 quarto, quarter.
 quasi, almost, as if.
 quello, that, that one, the one,
 the, he; — che, what, that.
 questo, this, this one.
 qui, here; di —, hence.

R

raccolta, collection.
 raccontare, to narrate, tell, tell
 about.
 rader, to shave, sweep.
 ragazza, girl.

ragazzo, boy.
 ragione, f., reason; avér —, to be
 right.
 râse, 3rd sing. past abs. of rádere.
 re, m., king.
 regalare, to give.
 regina, queen.
 regnare, to reign.
 rendere, to render, give back,
 make.
 résero, 3rd pl. past abs. of
 rêdere.
 restare, to stay.
 restituire, to give back.
 ribellarsi, to rebel.
 ribelle, m., rebel.
 ricchezza, riches, wealth.
 ricco, rich.
 ricevere, to receive, get.
 richiedere, to ask.
 riconoscere, to recognize.
 ricuperare, to recover, regain.
 ricusare, to refuse, deny.
 ridere, to laugh.
 rifiutare, to refuse.
 rifugiarsi, to take refuge.
 riguardare, to look again, regard,
 concern.
 rilevare, to raise again; *refl.*, to
 rise again.
 rimanere, to remain, be left, be.
 rimettere, to replace; *refl.*, to gain.
 rincrescere, to displease; mi rin-
 crésce, I'm sorry.
 rincrescimento, regret.
 ringraziare, to thank.
 ripetere, to repeat.
 risalire, to go up.
 riso, smile.
 risollevaré, to raise again.
 rispettare, to respect.

| | |
|--|--|
| rispêrto, respect. | sciôgliere, to untie, remove. |
| rispôndere, to answer, reply. | sciôpero, strike; fare —, to strike. |
| rispôse, 3rd sing. past abs. of rispôdere. | scodêlla, bowl. |
| ritárdo, delay; in —, late. | scópa, broom. |
| ritirâre, to draw back. | scopâre, to sweep. |
| riuscíre, to go out again, succeed. | scordársi di, to forget. |
| rivedére, to see again. | scórso, last. |
| rizzâre, to raise; <i>refl.</i> , to rise. | scrivanía, desk. |
| Róma, Rome. | scrívere, to write. |
| româno, Roman. | scuôla, school. |
| românzo, novel. | scúro, dark. |
| rômpere, to break. | se, if, whether; se non , except; |
| rôsa, rose. | se non che , if . . . not, but; |
| rôseo, rosy. | non . . . se non , only. |
| rôsso, red. | sêcolo, century. |
| rotôndo, round. | secôndo, according to. |
| S | |
| sácro, sacred. | sedére, to sit; sedûto, sitting. |
| salíre, to go up. | sêggiola, chair. |
| salôtto, parlor. | segnâre, to mark. |
| salutâre, — a, to greet. | seguênte, following. |
| salúte, f., health. | seguiâre, to follow; — a, to keep on. |
| sângue, m., blood. | sémplice, simple. |
| sâno, sane, safe. | sêmpre, always. |
| sânto, holy; saint. | sénno, wisdom. |
| sapére, to know, find out, know how, be able; far —, to tell; non — in che móndo si sía , not to know where one is, to be completely bewildered; un non so che di buôno , something good, a certain goodness; non so quâle , some . . . or other. | sensazíone, f., sensation. |
| scála, stair. | sênsô, sense. |
| scárpa, shoe. | sentíre, to feel, hear, listen, listen to; sentîte , I say, tell me. |
| scêna, scene. | sênça, — che , without. |
| scêndere, to go down. | séra, evening. |
| sciôcco, fool; da —, foolishly. | sêrva, servant. |
| | servíre, to serve. |
| | servitôre, m., servant. |
| | séte, f., thirst; avér —, to be thirsty. |
| | settimâna, week. |
| | sevêro, severe. |
| | sfôrzo, effort. |
| | sguárdo, glance. |

| | |
|--|---|
| sì, yes, so; ah sì?, is that so?; sì | spína, thorn. |
| che è buêno, it's very good indeed. | spírito, spirit. |
| siépe, f., hedge. | spôsa, wife. |
| signóra, lady. | spôso, bridegroom; <i>adj.</i> , engaged. |
| signóre, m., lord, gentleman, master, Mr. | stamáne, this morning. |
| silenzioso, silent, still. | stánno, 3rd pl. pres. ind. of stáre. |
| símile, similar, like, such. | stanôtte, last night. |
| simpático, sympathetic, agreeable. | stánza, room. |
| sincêro, sincere. | stáre, to stand, be, stay, sit; — per, to be about to. |
| Sistína, Sistine. | staséra, this evening. |
| so, 1st sing. pres. ind. of sapére. | státo, state. |
| società, society. | stazióne, f., station. |
| soffrìre, to suffer. | stermináto, boundless. |
| soggiogáre, to subjugate. | stêssso, same, self. |
| sôglia, threshold. | stôffa, stuff, goods. |
| sôglio, throne. | stôria, history, story. |
| sôgno, dream. | stôrico, historic, historical. |
| soldáto, soldier. | stráda, street, road. |
| sôldo, penny, cent. | stráno, strange. |
| sôle, m., sun, sunlight. | strappáre, to snatch, tear. |
| solére, to be wont. | stréutto, narrow. |
| sôlo, alone, single, only. | strídulo, harsh, rustling. |
| soltânto, only. | strîngere, to bind, press. |
| sorêlla, sister. | studênte, m., student. |
| sormontâre, to surmount. | studiáre, to study. |
| Sorrênto, Sorrento. | stúdio, study. |
| sorrídere, to smile. | stupefátto, astonished. |
| sospettâre, to suspect. | stupêndo, fine. |
| sôtto, beneath. | su, up, on, upon. |
| spagnuôlo, Spanish; n., Spaniard. | sûbito, at once; — che, as soon as. |
| spaventâre, to frighten. | succêdere, to succeed, follow, happen; succêdersi, n. m., suc- cession. |
| spázio, space. | successívô, succeeding. |
| spedále, m., hospital. | suôno, sound. |
| spedire, to send. | superiôre, superior. |
| speránza, hope. | |
| speráre, to hope. | |
| spésso, often. | T |
| spêttro, spectre, ghost. | tacére, to be silent or still. |
| spiegáre, to explain. | tacitúrno, taciturn, silent. |

| | |
|---|--|
| tále, such, so. | triónto, triumph. |
| tánto, so much, as, so; — piú, all the more. | tríste, sad. |
| tárdi, late. | trôppo, too, too much, very; pur —, unfortunately. |
| tárdo, slow. | trovâre, to find. |
| tásca, pocket. | tumûltô, tumult. |
| távola, table. | tútto, all, everything; — il, the whole; tútti e dúe, both. |
| teátro, theatre. | |
| tedéscô, German. | |
| telefonâre, to telephone. | U |
| têma, <i>m.</i> , theme. | ubbidíre, to obey. |
| temére, to fear, be afraid. | uccêllo, bird. |
| têmpo, time, weather; tânto —, so long. | udíre, to hear. |
| tenére, to hold; — per férmo, to be certain; — vívo, to keep up. | último, last, latest. |
| têrra, earth, ground, land, world. | umâno, human, of man, kindly. |
| terríbile, terrible. | úmido, wet. |
| terrôre, <i>m.</i> , terror. | uníre, to unite. |
| tesôro, treasure. | unitâ, unity, union. |
| têsta, head. | universitâ, university. |
| Tévere, <i>m.</i> , Tiber. | úno, one, some, someone; 1' — e l' áltro, both. |
| tíngere, to tinge, stain. | uômo, man. |
| toccâre, to touch, feel. | úscio, doorway, door. |
| tôgliere, to take; — a, to take from. | uscíre, to go out; — di, to leave. |
| tôno, tone. | útile, useful, good. |
| tornâre, to return, go back, come back; tornârsene, to come home. | |
| tórre, <i>f.</i> , tower. | V |
| tôrto, wrong; avér —, to be wrong. | vacánza, vacation. |
| totále, total. | vácca, cow. |
| tra, between, through. | vagóne, <i>m.</i> , car. |
| tranquillaménte, calmly. | valére, to be worth; far —, to prove. |
| trárre, to draw, bring, take. | valígia, valise, bag. |
| trascinâre, to drag. | valláta, valley. |
| trattâre, to treat. | van, 3rd <i>pl. pres. ind.</i> of andâre. |
| tremâre, to tremble. | vaticâno, Vatican. |
| trêno, train. | vêccchia, old woman. |
| trionfâle, triumphal. | vêccchio, old; <i>n.</i> , old man. |
| | vedére, to see; far —, to show. |
| | véndere, to sell. |
| | venerdì, Friday. |

| | |
|---|--|
| Venêzia, Venice. | virtù, <i>f.</i> , virtue. |
| veníre, to come, be; — in ménte, to occur. | visíno, little face. |
| ventína: úna — di, twenty or so. | vísita, visit. |
| vênto, wind. | visitáre, to visit. |
| vérde, green. | víso, face. |
| vermíglia, vermillion, red. | vística, sight, view. |
| véro, true; non è — ?, <i>a request for assent, to be translated, according to the context, as am I not?</i> , was he not? etc. | vítia, life. |
| vêrso, toward. | vívere, to live. |
| vessíllo, banner. | vívó, alive, keen; tenér —, to keep up. |
| vestíto, dress. | vízio, vice. |
| vi, there, to it, in it. | vóce, <i>f.</i> , voice. |
| vía, way, street; <i>adv.</i> , away. | volére, to will, be willing, wish, want, like, intend, decide, grant, think; — díre, to mean; ci |
| viággio, journey. | vuôle, it takes; côsa vuôle?, never mind. |
| viavái, <i>m.</i> , coming and going, surging. | vôlta, time; úna —, once, once upon a time; un' áltra —, again. |
| vién, <i>3rd sing. pres. ind. of veníre.</i> | volúme, <i>m.</i> , volume. |
| vília, villa. | vóto, vote. |
| villággio, village. | |
| víncere, to win, vanquish, conquer, overcome; dársi per vínto, to give in. | Z |
| víno, wine. | zío, uncle. |
| vínto, <i>pp. of víncere.</i> | zítto, silent. |

ENGLISH-ITALIAN VOCABULARY

This vocabulary contains all English words appearing in exercise sections involving translation into Italian, except articles, cardinal and ordinal numerals, and possessive and personal pronouns.

Italian nouns ending in **o** are masculine and those ending in **a** are feminine, unless indication to the contrary is given.

Irregular Italian verbs are marked with a star.

A

- able:** be —, potére.*
about, (= *approximately*) circa;
 (= *around*) intórno a; — it, ne;
 be — to, stáre * per.
according to, secóndo.
ache, dolére.*
affection, affétto.
afraid: be —, temére.
after, dópo; **day** — tomorrow,
 domán l' altro.
again, ancóra.
against, cóntro; (*before a disjunctive pronoun*) cóntra di.
agent, fattóre, *m.*
agreeable, simpático.
all, tútto; **not . . . at —,** non . . .
 púnто.
allude, allúdere.*
almost, quásí.
alone, sólo.
already, già.
although, benchè.
always, sémpre.
among, fra.
amuse, divertíre.
ancient, antíco.
and, e; go —, andáre * a.
- another,** un altro.
answer, rispóndere.*
any, *adj.*, alcúno; **not . . . —,**
 non . . . nessúno; *pron.*, ne.
anything, qualche cosa; **not . . .**
 —, non . . . niénte.
applaud, applaudíre.
apple, méla.
April, apríle, *m.*
arrival, arrívo.
arrive, arriváre.
as, cóme, tánto, quánto: *see 32;*
 as soon as, súbito che; **as far**
 as, fino a.
ascend, salíre.*
ashamed: be —, vergognársi.
ask, (*lesson 15*) domandáre; (*lesson 32 and later lessons*) chiédere *; — **for,** chiédere.*
at, a; at last, finalménte; **at least,**
 alméno; **at once,** súbito; **at his house,** da lúi; **not . . . at all,** non . . . púnто; **look at,**
 guardáre.
aunt, zía.
automobile, automóbile, *m.*
autumn, autúnno.
away, vía; **go —,** andársene.*

B

back, dietro; come or go —, tornare; give —, restituire.

bad, cattivo.

bag, valigia.

basket, panière, *m.*

be, essere *; (*of health*) stáre *;

I am to, dévo.* Other idioms with be are registered only under the other words concerned.*

beat, bátttere.

beautiful, bello.

because, perchè.

before, *adv.*, prima; *conj.*, prima che; *prep.*, (*of time*) prima di; (*of place*) davanti.

beg, pregáre.

begin, cominciare.

behind, dietro; (*before a disjunctive pronoun*) dietro a.

believe, credere.

beside, accanto a.

best, *adj.*, migliore; *adv.*, meglio.

betray, tradire.

better, *adj.*, migliore; *adv.*, meglio.

between, tra.

big, grande.

bind, stringere.*

black, nero.

book, libro.

born: be —, nascere.*

both, tutti e due.

bow, inchino.

boy, ragazzo.

brave, coraggioso.

bread, pane, *m.*

break, rompere.*

brick, mattone, *m.*

bring, portare.

broad, largo.

brother, fratello.

build, costruire.*

business, affare, *m.*

but, ma; (= only) non . . . che.

button, bottone, *m.*

buy, comprare.

by, da; (*in special cases*) di, per.

C

call, chiamare.

can: I —, posso.*

care, cura; take —, badare.

carry, portare.

cent, soldo.

centre, centro.

century, secolo; see 39 (c).

certain, certo.

cheek, guancia.

child, fanciullo.

choose, scelgere.*

church, chiesa.

city, città. .

close, chiudere.*

cloud, nuvola.

coat, abito.

coffee, caffè, *m.*

cold, freddo.

color, colore, *m.*

come, venire*; — back, tornare;
— in, entrare.

comfort, confortare.

company, compagnia.

compel, costringere.*

conduct, condurre.*

conquer, vincere.*

consist, constare.*

content, contento.

continue, continuare.

convince, convincere.*

cook, cuocere.*

corner, canto.

cost, costáre.

count, cónte, *m.*

country, paése, *m.*

courage, corággio.

cousin, cugíno.

cover, copríre.*

crowd, affolláre.

crude, crúdo.

cry, piángere.*

custom, costúme, *m.*

cut, tagliáre.

D

dark, scúro; (*lessons 25 and 33*)

búio.

day, giórno; — after tomorrow,
domán l' altro.

decide, decídere.*

depart, partíre.

desire, *n.*, desidério.

desire, *vb.*, desideráre.

desk, scrivanía.

die, moríre.*

difficult, diffícile.

difficulty, difficoltà.

dinner, pránzo.

disappear, sparíre.*

ditch, fôssa.

divide, divídere.*

do, fáre.* *For do as auxiliary,*
see 54 (g).

doge, dôge, *m.*

door, pôrta.

doubt, dûbbio.

down, giù; sit —, sedére.*

drag, trárre.*

draw, trárre.*

dress, vestíto.

drink, bêre.*

duke, dúca, *m.*

E

each, *adj.*, ógni; *pron.*, ognúno;

— other: *see 47, 2 and 51 (f).*

early, prêsto.

earn, guadagnáre.

easy, fácil.

eat, mangiáre.

egg, uôvo.

either, o.

Emmanuel, Emanuèle, *m.*

employee, impiegáto.

end, finíre.

enemy, nemíco.

English, inglés.

enjoy, godére.

enough, abbastâanza; **be** —, ba-
stáre.

enter, entráre.

entreaty, preghiéra.

escape, scappáre.

Europe, Európa.

even, ancóra; **not** . . . —, non
. . . nemménó.

evening, séra; **this** —, staséra.

ever, sêmpre.

every, ógni.

everything, tútto.

examination, esáme, *m.*

exclamation, esclamazióne, *f.*

exist, esistere.*

explain, spiegáre.

express, esprímere.*

extinguish, spêgnere.*

eye, ôcchio.

F

face, fáccia.

fall, cadére.*

far, lontáno; **as** — **as**, fino a.

father, pádre, *m.*

fatherland, pátria.

fault, cólpa.

favor, favóre, *m.*

fear, temére.

feel, sentiré.

few, a —, pôchi.

fight, combátttere.

finally, finalménite.

find, trováre.

fine, bêllo.

finger, díto.

finish, finíre.

first, *adv.*, prima.

flee, fuggíre.

Florence, Firênze, *f.*

flower, fiôre, *m.*

follow, seguíre.*

foot, piêde, *m.*

for, per; — two years, dûe ánni,

da dûe ánni: see 79 (*e*); ask —,

chiédere *; look —, cercáre;

wait —, aspettáre.

foreigner, forestière, *m.*

France, Fráncia.

French, francése.

friend, amíco.

from, da; (*in special cases*) di.

fry, fríggere.*

full, piêno.

G

gallery, gallería.

garden, giardíno.

gather, cõgliere.*

gentleman, signóre, *m.*

get, ricévere.

girl, ragázza.

give, dáre *; — back, restituíre.

glasses, occhiáli, *m. pl.*

glove, guánto.

go, andáre *; go away, andár-

sene *; go back, tornáre; go in, entráre; go out, uscíre *; go up, salíre.*

good, buônó.

goods, stôffa.

government, govêrno.

gratitude, gratitúdine, *f.*

great, grânde.

greet, salutáre.

grieve, dolére.*

ground, têrra.

grow, crêscere.*

guarantee, garantíre.

guard, guárdia.

H

habit, abitúdine, *f.*

half, *n.*, metà; *adj.*, mêzzo; — past two, le dûe e mêzzo.

hand, máno, *f.*; right —, dêstra.

handkerchief, fazzoléttò.

handsome, bêllo.

happen, succêdere.*

happy, felíce.

hard, *adv.*, fôrte.

harm, nuôcere.*

hat, cappêllo.

have, avére *; (*causative*) fâré *; (*expressing obligation*) dovére.*

For have as auxiliary, see 54, 3.

head, tête.

health, salúte, *f.*

hear, sentiré; (*lesson 38*) udíre.*

help, aiutáre; not to be able to —, non potére * a méno di non.

here, qui, ci: see 84; — is, éccc.

hide, nascóndere.*

high, áltô.

hill, côle, *m.*

hold, tenére.*

home, cása.

honor, onóre, *m.*

hope, speráre.

hotel, albérgo.

hour, óra.

house, cásá; at his —, da lúi.

how, cóme; — much, quánto.

I

idea, idéa.

if, se.

impossible, impossibile.

in, in; (*with the name of a city*)

a; (= *within*) fra; (*in special cases*) di; **come or go in**, entráre; **in order that**, perchè; **in this way**, così.

industrious, industrioso.

instead, invéce.

interesting, interessánte.

into, in; (*in special cases*) a.

invade, invádere.*

Italian, italiáno.

Italy, Itália.

J

John, Giovánni, *m.*

June, giúgno.

K

keep, tenére *; — **still**, tacére.*

key, chiáve, *f.*

kill, uccídere.*

king, re, *m.*

knock, picchiáre.

know, sapére *; (= *be acquainted with*) conóscere.*

L

lady, signóra.

lake, lágo.

large, gránde.

last, último; at —, finalmén-te;

— night, stanótte; — year,

l' árno scórso.

late, in ritárdo.

latest, último.

laugh, rídere.*

lawyer, avvocáto.

lead, menáre.

leaf, fóglia.

least: at —, alméno.

leave, (*intransitive*) partfre; (*transitive*) lasciáre.

lend, prestáre.

lesson, lezióne, *f.*

let, lasciáre. *For let as auxiliary, see the note on p. 115.*

letter, lèttera.

library, bibliotéca.

lie, giacére.*

life, víta.

light, *n.*, lúme, *m.*

light, *vb.*, accéndere.*

like, *prep.*, cóme; — **a man**, da uômo.

like, *vb.*, (*with an infinitive*) volére *; I like it, mi piácc.*

line, línea.

little, píccolo; a — (= *some*), un po' di; (= *somewhat*), un po'.

live, vívere.*

long, lúngo.

look, — at, guardáre; — for, cercáre.

lose, pérdere.

love, amáre.

low, profondo.

lunch, colazióne, *f.*

M

make, fáre.*

man, uômo; **young** —, gióvane, *m.*

manner, maniera.

market, mercato.

Mary, María.

may: I —, posso.*

Milan, Milán, *f.*

mile, miglio.

minute, minuto; ten minutes past two, le due e dieci; ten minutes of two, le due meno dieci.

mistaken: be —, sbagliarsi.

moment, momento.

monarch, monárca, *m.*

Monday, lunedì.

money, denaro.

month, mese, *m.*

more, più.

morning, mattina; this —, stamane.

most, più.

mother, madre, *f.*

mountain, montagna.

move, muovere.*

Mr., signor.

much, molto; how —, quanto; so —, tanto; too —, troppo; very —, molto.

must: I —, devo.*

N

name, nome, *m.*

Naples, Nápoli, *f.*

near, vicino a.

necessary, necessário; be —, bisognare.

never, mai.

new, nuovo.

newspaper, giornale, *m.*

night, notte, *f.*; last —, stanotte.

no, no; — one, nessuno.

noon, mezzogiorno.

not, non.

novel, romanzo.

now, ora.

O

obliged: be —, dovre.*

o'clock: two —, le due.

of, di; of it, of him, of them, ne; ten minutes of two, le due meno dieci.

off, via; take —, levare.

offer, offrire.*

often, spesso.

old, vecchio.

on, su; (*in special cases*) con.

once, una volta; at —, subito.

one, uno; (*as indefinite subject*) si; no —, nessuno; other —, altro; that —, the —, quello; this —, questo; — who, chi.

only, *adj.*, sólo; *adv.*, soltanto.

open, *adj.*, aperto.

open, *vb.*, aprire.*

or, o; ten or so: see 40.

order, *n.*, ordine, *m.*; in — that, perchè.

order, *vb.*, comandare.

other, — one, altro; each —: see 47, 2 and 51 (*f.*).

ought: I —, dovréi.

out, fuori; go —, uscire *; put —, spiegner.*

outside, di fuori.

owe, dovre.*

own, proprio.

P

pain, dolére.*

pair, páio.

paper, cárta.
pardon, perdonáre.
parlor, salôtto.
past, passáto; **half — two**, le dúc
e mèzzo.

patience, paziênsa.

pay, pagáre.

peasant, contadíno.

pen, pénna.

pencil, matítia.

perfectly, perféttaménte.

perhaps, fórse.

person, persóna.

persuade, persuadére.*

photograph, fotografía.

picture, quâdro.

place, *n.*, pôsto.

place, *vb.*, pôrre.*

please, piacére.*

pleasure, piacére, *m.*

pocket, tásca.

poem, poesía.

polite, gentíle.

poor, pôvero.

pope, pápa, *m.*

porter, facchíno.

praise, lodáre.

prefer, preferíre.

present, presentáre.

press, prêmere.

pretty, bêllo.

prisoner, prigioníero.

probably, probabilménte.

promise, prométtere.*

protect, protêggere.*

provided, purchè.

public, pubblico.

push, spíngere.*

put, (*lessons 28 and 30*) méttere *;

(*lessons 32 and 34*) pôrre *; —

out, spêgnere.*

Q

queen, regína.

quick, súbito.

R

rain, piôvere.*

read, lèggere.*

ready, prônto.

really, veraménte.

recall, ricordáre.

receive, ricévere.

recognize, conóscere.*

red, róssso.

remain, rimanére.*

Renaissance, Rinasciménto.

repeat, ripêtere.

respect, rispettáre.

return, tornáre.

right, dirítto; — **hand**, dêstra; **be**
—, avér * ragióne.

rise, sórgere.*

river, fiúme, *m.*

Rome, Róma.

room, stánza.

rose, rôsa.

round, rotóndo.

run, córrere.*

Russia, Rússia.

S

sacristan, sagrestáno.

say, díre.*

scene, scêna.

school, scuôla.

search, cercáre.

seated, sedúto.;

see, vedére.*

seek, cercáre.

seem, parére.*

| | |
|---|---|
| self, stéssö. | spend, (<i>of money</i>) spêndere *; |
| send, mandáre. | (<i>of time</i>) passáre. |
| sentence, fráscë, <i>f.</i> | square, piázza. |
| September, settêmbre, <i>m.</i> | stand, stáre.* |
| servant, servitóre, <i>m.</i> | start, partíre. |
| serve, servíre. | station, stazióne, <i>f.</i> |
| several, paréchhi. | stay, (<i>lesson 15</i>) restáre; (<i>lesson 24</i> and later lessons) rimanére.* |
| sew, cucíre.* | still, <i>adj.</i> , quiêto; keep —, tacére.* |
| shake, scuôtere.* | still, <i>adv.</i> , ancóra. |
| shoe, scárpa. | stocking, cálza. |
| shop, bottéga. | street, vía. |
| short, córto. | student, studénte, <i>m.</i> |
| shoulder, spálla. | study, <i>n.</i> , stúdio. |
| show, mostráre. | study, <i>vb.</i> , studiáre. |
| shut, chiûdere.* | such a, un tále. |
| sick, maláto. | suffer, soffríre.* |
| sight, vísta. | summer, estáte, <i>f.</i> |
| silent, silenzióso; be —, tacére.* | sun, sóle, <i>m.</i> |
| since, (<i>causal</i>) poichè; (<i>temporal</i>) dacchè. | Sunday, doménica. |
| sincere, sincêro. | sure, sicúro. |
| sing, cantáre. | surprise, <i>n.</i> , sorprésa. |
| sir, signóre, <i>m.</i> | surprise, <i>vb.</i> , sorprêndere *; be surprised, meravigliársi. |
| sister, sorêlla. | surrender, rêndersi.* |
| sit, — down, sedére.* | surround, cíngere.* |
| site, sito. | swear, giuráre. |
| sleep, dormíre. | sword, spáda. |
| small, píccolo. | syllable, síllaba. |
| smile, sorridere.* | |
| smoke, fúmo. | |
| snow, <i>n.</i> , néve, <i>f.</i> | |
| snow, <i>vb.</i> , nevicáre. | |
| so, così; so much, tánto; I think so, lo crédo; ten or so: see 40. | T |
| some, alcúno, qualche, ne: see 89. | table, távola. |
| someone, qualcúno. | take, prêndere*; (= take away) |
| something, qualche côsa. | tôgliere *; (= accompany, lead) |
| song, cánto. | menáre; — care, badáre; — off, leváre; it takes, ci vuóle.* |
| sonnet, sonétto. | talk, parláre. |
| soon, prêsto; as — as, súbito che. | tall, álto. |
| speak, parláre. | telephone, telefonáre. |
| | tell, (<i>lessons 13-17</i>) raccontáre; (<i>lessons 35-40</i>) díre.* |

- than**, che, di: *see 33.*
- thank**, ringraziáre.
- that**, *conj.*, che; *in order* —, perchè.
- that**, *pron.*, quéllo, ciò, che: *see 42 and 44;* — **one**, quéllo.
- theatre**, teátro.
- then**, pôi.
- there**, là, vi, ci: *see 84;* — **is**: *see note on p. 109.*
- thing**, côsa.
- think**, (= meditate) pensáre; (= suppose) crêdere.
- this**, quésto; — **one**, quésto; *in* — **way**, così; — **morning**, stamáne; — **evening**, staséra.
- though**, però.
- thousand**, migliáio.
- through**, per.
- ticket**, bigliéttó.
- time**, têmpo, vólta: *see note on p. III.*
- to**, a; (*before the name of a country*) in; (*in special cases*) da, di, per; **according to**, secôndo; **be about to**, stáre * per. *For to before an infinitive, see 79 (b); for to with an unemphatic personal pronoun, see 47-50.*
- today**, oggi.
- tomorrow**, domání; **day after** —, domán l' altro.
- too**, — **much**, trôppo; **he** —, ánche lúi.
- toward**, vêrso.
- tower**, tórre, *f.*
- train**, trêno.
- travel**, viaggiáre.
- tree**, álbero.
- true**, véro.
- trunk**, baúle, *m.*
- try, cercáre.
- turn**, (*intransitive*) vôlgersi*; (*transitive*) vôlgere.*
- U**
- umbrella**, ombréllô.
- under**, sótto.
- understand**, capíre.
- until**, *conj.*, finchè non; *prep.* fíno a.
- up**, su; **up to**, fíno a; **go up**, salíre.*
- V**
- vase**, váso.
- Venice**, Venêzia.
- very**, — **much**, móltô.
- Victor**, Vittório.
- view**, vísta.
- villa**, vílla.
- village**, villággio.
- visit**, visitáre.
- vote**, votáre.
- W**
- wait**, — **for**, aspettáre.
- wake**, svegliáre.
- walk**, cammináre.
- wall**, mûro.
- want**, volére.*
- warm**, cálido.
- waste**, sprecáre.
- watch**, guardáre.
- water**, ácqua.
- way**, vía; *in this* —, così.
- weather**, têmpo.
- week**, settimána.
- weep**, piángere.*
- well**, bêne.
- what**, *interj.*, cóme.

| | |
|---|---|
| what, <i>pron.</i> , quéllo che, che, che cosa: <i>see 42-44.</i> | wont: be —, solére.* |
| when, quándo. | wood, bôscô. |
| where, dóve. | word, parôla. |
| wherever, dovúnque. | work, <i>n.</i> , lavóro; (<i>literary work</i>) ôpera. |
| which, che, quálé: <i>see 43 and 44.</i> | work, <i>vb.</i> , lavoráre. |
| while, méntre. | worse, pêggio. |
| white, biánco. | worth: be —, valére.* |
| who, chi, che: <i>see 43 and 44; one —, chi; whom, cûi.</i> | worthy, dégno. |
| whole, intêro; the —, tútto il. | write, scrívere.* |
| whose, di chi. | writer, scrittôre, <i>m.</i> |
| why, perchè. | wrong: be —, avér* tôrto. |
| wife, móglie, <i>f.</i> | |
| willing: be —, volére.* | |
| wind, vênto. | |
| window, finêstra. | |
| winter, invêrno. | |
| wish, volére.* | |
| with, con. | |
| without, sênza; (<i>before a disjunctive pronoun</i>) sênza di. | |
| woman, dônnna. | |

Y

| |
|--|
| year, ánno. |
| yellow, giállo. |
| yes, sì. |
| yesterday, iêri. |
| yet, ancóra; (= nevertheless) ep-púre. |
| yield, cêdere. |
| young, gióvane. |

INDEX

[The numbers refer to paragraphs. *Ad. N.* means the Additional Notes on Pronunciation printed on pp. 6-10.]

- a** (letter): 2; Ad. N., 2.
a (preposition): 79; 79, *b*, *h*.
Accent: 7; Ad. N. (pp. 9, 10); 47; 48; 84; 92, *e*.
Accents: 3; 7.
Address (forms of): 52.
Adjectives: 26-34.
 Comparison: 31-34; gender: 26; 28; number: 26; 29; position: 27; used as nouns: 20; 30.
Adverbs: 80-85.
 ci, **vi**: 47, *a*; 84; comparison: 80, 2; manner: 85; **ne**: 47, 3, *a*; 56, *b*; 'never': 83; 'not,' **non**: 80, 1; 81; 91, *a*; 'only': 82; position: 80, 1; 'so': 85, *a*.
'All': 87.
Alphabet: 1; Ad. N., 1.
altrui: 91, *d*.
'Any': 88.
Articles: 9-16.
Augmentatives: 35-37.
Auxiliary verbs: 53-57.
 avere: 53, *b*; 54, 3; **essere**: 53, *a*; 54, 1, 3; compound tenses: 54; 56; modal auxiliaries: 57.
 avere: 53, *b*; 54, 3; 54, *b*; 92, 5.
 'Be': 53, *a*; 54, 1, 3; 54, *a*, *c*, *d*, *f*; 92, 126.
bello: 29, *c*.
'Both': 38, 4; 91.
buono: 29, *c*.
'Can': see Modal Auxiliaries.
ci (adv.): 47, *a*; 84.
ci (pron.): 47-50.
Close Vowels: 3; Ad. N., 3.
Comparison: 31-34; 80, 2.
 Adjectives: 31-34; adverbs: 80, 2; irregular: 31, *a*; 80, 2.
Compound Tenses: 54; 56; 73; 75.
Conditional: see Past Future.
Conjugation: 53-68; 92.
 First: 59; second: 60; third: 60; fourth: 61; variations: 63; 66, *a*; 68; irregular verbs: 64-68; 92; auxiliary verbs: 53-57; compound tenses: 54; 56; compound verbs: 67, *a*; 93, *a*.
Conjunctions: 78.
 With subjunctive: 77, *d*; 78, *a*, *b*.
Consonants: 4-6; Ad. N., 4-6.
Contraction: 12; 23 (2); 50 (1); 63, *d*; 65; 66, 1; 68, *a*.

- da:** 79, *c, f, g.*
Dates: 38, *b; 39, b, c.*
Definite Article: 10-13.
 Form: 10-12; use: 12, *a; 13;*
38, b; 39, a; 45; 69; 70.
di: 12; 17; 79, *b, 3, f, h, j.*
Diminutives: 35-37.
 'Do': 54, *g.*
Double Letters: 6.
Doubling: Ad. N., 6; 48, *d; 93, a.*
e (letter): 3; Ad. N., 3; 68, *i, j.*
e (conjunction): 78; 78, *c.*
ecco: 48, *e; 84, a.*
essere: 53, *a; 54, 1, 3; 54, a, c, d;*
92, 126.
Exclamations: Ad. N (p. 10); 43,
b; 79, b.
 'For': 79, *e.*
Fractions: 39, *d.*
Future: 54, 2; 68, *c; 74; 77.*
 Contracted: 65; 66, *1.*
Gender: 9-11; 14-15; 18-21; 26;
28.
grande: 29, *c.*
h: 4; 22, *a; 23, a, c; 59, a.*
 'Have': 53, *b; 54, 3; 54, b, h; 57,*
a; 92, 5.
 'Here': 84.
i (letter): 2; 2, *a; 4; Ad. N., 2; 22,*
b; 23, b; 59, a; 60; 92, f.
i (euphonic): 79; 81.
Imperative: 66, *b; 72; 77, a.*
Imperfect: see Past Descriptive.
Impersonal Verbs: 51; 51, *h; 77, c.*
Indefinite Article: 14-16.
 Form: 14-15; use: 16; 38, *1;*
43, b.
- Infinitive:** 48, *b; 58; 69-72.*
 Contracted: 65.
Inflections of the Voice: see p. 9.
Interrogation: see Questions.
issimo (suffix): 35, *a.*
 'It': 47; 51; 51, *h.*
- Letters:** 1; Ad. N., 1.
 'May': see Modal Auxiliaries.
Modal Auxiliaries: 57.
Moods: 57; 69-77; 78, *a.*
 Conditional: see Past Future.
Imperative: 66, *b; 72; 77, a;*
 infinitive: 48, *b; 58; 65; 69-*
72; participle: 54, a, b; 62;
63, d; 69-71; subjunctive:
44, c; 77; 78, a.
 'Must': see Modal Auxiliaries.
 'Myself,' 'thyself,' etc.: 47, 2;
51, e.
- ne** (adv.): 47, *a; 56, b; 84.*
ne (pron.): 47, 3; 48; 49; 88; 89.
Neuter Verbs: 54, 3; 56, *a.*
 'Never': 83.
non: 80, 1; 81; 91, *a.*
 'Not': 80, 1; 81.
Nouns: 17-25.
 Gender: 18-21; number: 22
25.
Number: 9-11; 22-25; 29.
Numerals: 38-40.
 Cardinal: 38; ordinal: 39.
- o** (letter): 3; Ad. N., 3; 59, *b.*
o (conjunction): 78; 78, *c.*
Old Forms: Ad. N., 3, *f; 12 (2);*
23 (2); 44, a; 47 (1); 48, d;
50 (1); 63, d; 68; 92; 93.

- 'One' (indefinite): 55; 86.
 'Only': 82.
 Open Vowels: 3; Ad. N., 3.
 'Ought': see Modal Auxiliaries.
- Participle: 54, *a, b*; 62; 63, *d*; 69–71.
 Past: 54, *a, b*; 63, *d*; 71, *c*;
 present: 62; 69–71.
 Partitive: 12, *a*; 88; 89.
 Passive: 54, *i*; 54, *f*; 55; 56, *c*.
 Past Absolute: 60; 65; 66, 2, 3; 68,
d, e; 75.
 Past Descriptive:
 Form: 63, 63, *c*; 65; 68, *a, h*;
 use: 54, *d, e*; 73; 75.
 Past Future: 54, 2; 68, *b*; 76; 77;
g, *c*.
 Contracted: 65; 66, *i*; 92, *c*.
 Past Perfect: see Perfect Tenses.
 Perfect Tenses: 54, 3; 56; 73; 75.
 Personal Pronouns: 46–52.
 Conjunctive: 47–50; form: 47;
 48, *c, d*; 50; 52, *i*; position:
 48; 49.
 Disjunctive: 51–52; omission:
 51, *z*; 51, *h*; use: 51; 51, *i*;
 51, *a, b, h*.
 Pitch: see p. 9.
 Pluperfect: see Perfect Tenses.
 Plural: 22–25; 29.
 Irregular: 23, *d*; 25; words in
 -*co* and -*go*: 23, *c*.
 Poetic Forms: see Old Forms.
 Possessive: 17; 45; 52, *i*.
 Prefixes: 93, *a*.
 Prepositions: 79.
 da: 79, *c, f, g*.
 'to': 79, *a, b*.
 Present: 65; 66, 4; 68, *f, g*;
z; 74.
- Preterit: see Past Absolute.
 Preterit Perfect: see Second Past Perfect.
 Pronouns: 41–52; 86–91.
 Demonstrative: 42; indefinite:
 86–91; interrogative, 43;
 personal: see Personal; possessive: see Possessive; reciprocal: see Reciprocal; reflexive: see Reflexive; relative: 44.
 Pronunciation: 1–8; Ad. N.
- qualche:** 29, *b*; 89.
Quantity: 2; Ad. N., 2.
Questions: Ad. N. (p. 10); 43; 51,
z; 77, *f, g*; 79, *b*; 81, *a*.
- Reciprocal Pronouns and Verbs:
 47, *z*; 48; 49; 50; 51, 3; 51,
 f; 52, *i*; 56, *b*.
 Reflexive Pronouns: 47, *z*; 48; 49;
 50; 51, 3; 52, *i*; 55; 56, *b*;
 63, *a*; 86.
 Reflexive Verbs: 55; 56, *b*; 63, *a*;
 86.
- santo:** 29, *c*.
Second Past Perfect: 54, 3; 75.
 'Shall': 54, *z*; 57.
 'Should': 54, *z*; 57; 76; 77.
 si: 47–50; 52; 55; 56, *b*; 63,
a; 86.
 'So': 85, *a*.
 'Some': 89.
 Spelling: 1–8.
 Subjunctive: 44, *c*; 77; 78, *a*.
 Suffixes: Ad. N., 3; 35–37; 85.
 Syllables: 8.

Tenses:

Compound: 54; 56; 73; 75.
 Future: see Future; imperfect: see Past Descriptive; past absolute: see Past Absolute; past descriptive: see Past Descriptive; present: see Present; preterit: see Past Absolute.

'Than': 33.

'There': 84.

Time of day: 38, *c.*

'To': 79, *a, b.*

u (letter): 2; 2, *a*; 4; Ad. N., 2.

Verbs: 53-77; 92; 93.

Auxiliary verbs: see Auxiliary; conjugation: see Conjugation;

tion; lists of irregular verbs: 92; 93; alphabetical: 93; by conjugations: 92; moods: see Moods; tenses: see Tenses; regular verbs: 55-56; 59-63; irregular verbs: 64-68; 92; regular parts: 66; compound verbs: 67, *a*; 93, *a*; old forms: 63, *d*; 68; 92.

vi (adv.): 47, *a*; 84.

Vowels: 2-3; Ad. N., 2-3.

'Whatever': 44, *c.*

'Whoever': 44, *c.*

'Will': 54, 2; 57.

'Would': 54, 2; 54, *e*; 57; 76; 77.

'You': 52; 86.

14 [REDACTED]
RETURN TO DESK FROM WHICH BORROWED

CIRCULATION DEPARTMENT

This book is due on the last date stamped below, or
on the date to which renewed.

Renewed books are subject to immediate recall.

REC. CIR. NOV 18 1978

REC. CIR. FEB 4 1980

REC CIR DEC 19 1985

JUL 19 1986
RECEIVED

JUL 7 1986

CIRCULATION DEPT.

LD21—32m—1,75
(S3845L)4970

General Library
University of California
Berkeley

GENERAL LIBRARY - U.C. BERKELEY



B000773113

